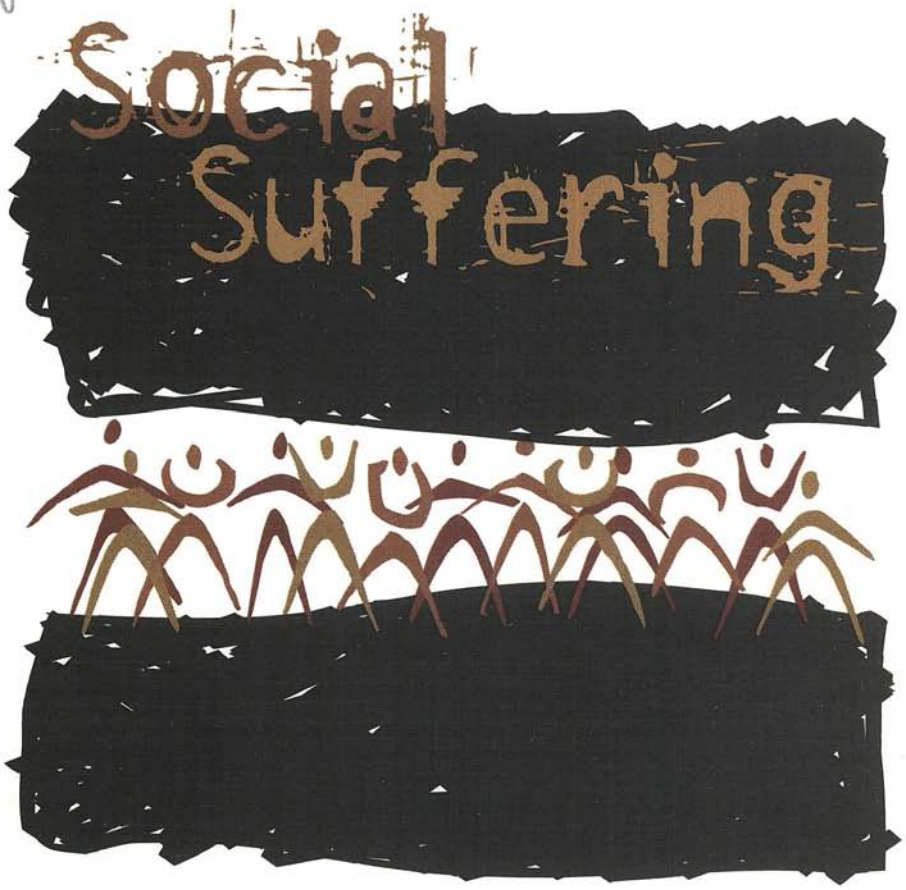
DÆDALUS

OURNAL OF THE AMERICAN ACADEMY OF ARTS AND SCIENCES
VINTER 1996
US: $7.95
CANADA: $10.35

Social Suffering



Stanley Cavell • Veena Das • Paul Farmer • Anne Harrington
Arthur Kleinman • Joan Kleinman • Lawrence L. Langer
Margaret Lock • David B. Morris • Mamphela Ramphele
Vera Schwarcz • Tu Wei-ming • Allan Young

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

BOARD OF EDITORS

David Apter, David Baltimore, Daniel Bell, Isaiah Berlin,
Guido Calabresi, Natalie Z. Davis, Wendy Doniger,
Clifford Geertz, Stephen J. Greenblatt, Vartan Gregorian,
Stanley Hoffmann, Gerald Holton, Donald Kennedy,
Sally F. Moore, Gian-Carlo Rota, W. G. Runciman,
Amartya K. Sen, Steven Weinberg

STEPHEN R. GRAUBARD
Editor of the Academy and of Dædalus

PHYLLIS S. BENDELL
Associate Editor

AMY E. TAYLOR
Assistant Editor

KATHRYN J. GRADY
Editorial and Circulation Assistant

MELISSA L. ROSER
Editorial and Circulation Assistant

Cover design by Michael Schubert, Director of Ruder-Finn Design

Printed on
recycled paper

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

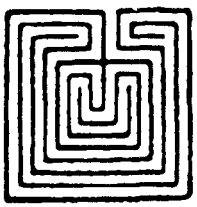
DÆDALUS

JOURNAL OF THE AMERICAN ACADEMY OF ARTS AND SCIENCES

Social Suffering

Winter 1996

Issued as Volume 125, Number 1, of the
Proceedings of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences



PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Winter 1996, "Social Suffering."
Issued as Volume 125, Number 1, of the Proceedings of the American Academy of Arts and Sciences.

© 1996 by the American Academy of Arts and Sciences, 136 Irving Street, Cambridge, MA 02138.

Library of Congress Catalog Number 12-30299.

Editorial Offices: Dædalus, *Norton's Woods, 136 Irving Street, Cambridge, MA 02138. Telephone: 617-491-2600. E-mail: daedalus@amacad.org*

Dædalus (ISSN 0011-5266) *is published quarterly by the American Academy of Arts and Sciences. US subscription rates: for individuals—$30, one year; $55, two years; $75, three years; for institutions—$45, one year; $75, two years; $100, three years. Canadian subscription rates: for individuals—$39, one year; $73, two years; $102, three years; for institutions—$55, one year; $94.50, two years; $128, three years. All other foreign subscribers must add $7.00 per year to the price of US subscriptions. Replacement copies for damaged or misrouted issues will be sent free of charge up to six months from the date of original publication. Thereafter, back copies are available for the current cover price plus postage and handling. GST number: 14034 3229 RT.*

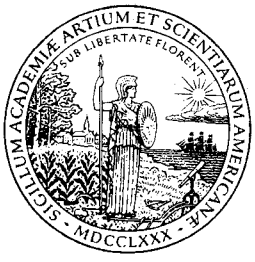
All subscription orders, single-copy orders, and change-of-address information must be sent in writing *to the* Dædalus *Business Office, 136 Irving Street, Suite 100, Cambridge, MA 02138, U.S.A.*

Printed in the United States of America. Printing Office: 2901 Byrdhill Road, Richmond, VA 23228.

U.S.A. newsstand distribution by Eastern News Distributors, Inc., 2020 Superior Street, Sandusky, OH 44870 (Telephone: 800-221-3148).

Second-class postage paid at Boston, MA, and at additional mailing offices.

Postmaster: Send address changes to DÆDALUS, *136 Irving Street, Suite 100, Cambridge, MA 02138, U.S.A.*



PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Contents

v Preface

xi Introduction

Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman

1 The Appeal of Experience; The Dismay of Images: Cultural Appropriations of Suffering in Our Times

David B. Morris

25 About Suffering: Voice, Genre, and Moral Community

Lawrence L. Langer

47 The Alarmed Vision: Social Suffering and Holocaust Atrocity

Veena Das

67 Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain

Stanley Cavell

93 Comments on Veena Das's Essay "Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain"

Mamphela Ramphele

99 Political Widowhood in South Africa: The Embodiment of Ambiguity

Vera Schwarcz

119 The Pane of Sorrow: Public Uses of Personal Grief in Modern China

Tu Wei-ming

149 Destructive Will and Ideological Holocaust: Maoism as a Source of Social Suffering in China

Anne Harrington

181 Unmasking Suffering's Masks: Reflections on Old and New Memories of Nazi Medicine

Margaret Lock

207 Displacing Suffering: The Reconstruction of Death in North America and Japan

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Allan Young
245 Suffering and the Origins of Traumatic Memory

Paul Farmer
261 On Suffering and Structural Violence: A View from Below

ADVISORY BOARD

Naomi Adelson, Talal Asad, Adelberto Barreto, John Bowker, Margaret Bowker, Stanley Cavell, Komatra Chuengsatiansup, Diana Colbert, E. Valentine Daniel, Veena Das, Robert Desjarlais, Paul Farmer, David Featherman, Julio Frenk, Stephen R. Graubard, Anne Harrington, Frank Kessel, Arthur Kleinman, Joan Kleinman, Felicia Knaul, Lawrence L. Langer, Robert Lawrence, Margaret Lock, Deepak Mehta, David B. Morris, Mamphela Ramphele, Pamela Reynolds, Vera Schwarcz, Milford Soko, Maya Todeschini, Tu Wei-ming, Carol Worthman, Allan Young

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Preface to the Issue "Social Suffering"

SOCIAL SUFFERING IS NOT A TERM in common use today; it does not figure in the subject indices of even the most sophisticated data banks; it is not an expression conventionally used by the mass media. There are no scholarly journals specifically committed to its study, that seek imaginatively to probe its many dimensions, to make more precise its various meanings. Given what we know about language, how much even words with legitimate claims to antiquity have taken on quite new meanings in response to conditions characteristic of modern society—one thinks, for example, of concepts like industry, democracy, class, art, and culture—that Raymond Williams recognized were fundamentally transformed by the events of the late eighteenth and early nineteenth centuries, it becomes important to think of how our own chaotic and cruel century has spawned a need for new terms, new concepts, adequate to the conditions that now prevail, helpful also in explaining the past.

If Alexis de Tocqueville was correct in believing that the institutional and cultural innovations of the new democracy, characteristic of the America he visited in the 1830s, called for the creation of a new political science, to explain the new phenomena of the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

popular culture he had observed, so different from those of monarchical and aristocratic Europe with which he and others of his generation were familiar, there is no less a need today to consider what international scholarly disciplines are able to contribute to understanding today's diverse civilizations, many recognized to be in turmoil. While a number are purportedly seeking to understand their past, to make some sense out of their contemporary predicaments, and while popular jargon insists that we all inhabit a "global village" where the whole world is watching (and, in theory, understanding) all major events and developments wherever they happen to occur, these are mass media myths, artfully propagated, intended to divert us, to conceal our ignorance about essential matters. Much of the world remains in the shadows, with precious little attention being given to specific ails, and even less, perhaps, to more promising possibilities. For a great number that we scarcely attend to, the interest of the outside world is largely episodic, waning and waxing with what are thought to be significant happenings, often given undue attention by a mass media industry concerned with selling its wares. In these conditions, the political events of much of the world are scanted; the moral dilemmas of even the most visible societies are scarcely alluded to.

Is it any wonder, then, that a great deal of the social suffering of our time is scarcely noted—that the concept itself is insufficiently understood and rarely alluded to—that the violence and injustice of our age, when it is rendered at all, is too often done in a conventional fashion that is often both maudlin and demeaning? We do not begin to understand why and how whole groups were threatened in the past, proscribed, discriminated against, how ethnic, racial, religious or political affiliation came to be an excuse for exclusion, how often that exclusion led to even more dire consequences. The theme of toleration, thought to be the hallmark of civilization in the seventeenth and eighteenth centuries, at least in certain corners of Europe, was believed to carry the promise of ending all kinds of brutality. Conventions that owed a great deal to tradition were gradually being abandoned, particularly when they reflected what were thought to be the cruelty and tyranny of an earlier, less enlightened age. For those who wanted to believe that superstition was on the way out, that a more rational and humane public and private existence was possible, there were

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

reasons for confidence, and these prevailed well into the nineteenth century, reinforced by what were thought to be the marvels of modern science and technology. Such confidence has not survived our own century of violence, and is not likely to be restored very soon. An earlier innocence has been lost, not least because of the events of this century, in Europe as much as in Asia, in the Americas as much as in Africa.

This is not said frequently enough, and when it is said, there is only scant appreciation of the conditions that exist in the world today where the experiences of different peoples have been so diverse, where so many harbor memories of dangers barely averted, of families destroyed, disasters brought on not by personal fault or negligence but by the accident of birth. Theories of collective guilt, that made whole communities the legitimate target of cruel and life-threatening punishment, that led millions of ordinary men and women to suffer humiliation, injury, or death, are integral parts of a historical tale that has different emphases, and is differently interpreted, in various corners of the globe. While all manner of indices suggest that the physical suffering of individuals, particularly in the so-called developed world, is today attenuated, in great part because of the miracles of modern medicine and public health measures, it is not nearly so apparent that the social suffering is equally reduced. How is one to calibrate the suffering of the aged, locked in their apartments, who cannot venture into the streets of their cities at night for fear of being attacked? How is one to render the social suffering of younger men and women who find no work, who have no prospects of gaining the respect and self-esteem commonly associated in contemporary society with gainful employ? Can these be compared with the suffering experienced by those caught in the trammels of war, the millions of young men who lost their lives in the two great wars of this century, not to speak of those other millions, namely civilians, caught in the cross fire? What is one to say of those presently persecuted for their political, religious, and ethnic affiliations in so many parts of the world? How is one to compare the suffering of tens of millions of Chinese and Russians in this century—the victims of war, torture, and famine—of political and cultural policies that made obscene demands on their allegiance, with what happened to tens of millions of others, including Jews and Armenians, Kurds and Poles,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

and any number of others, mercilessly slaughtered, hounded from their homes, separated from their families? And how do all these events lead us to see the past in a new light, reinterpreting the wars and revolutions of another century, but also looking with new eyes at the institutions that were common for so long, the slavery and bondage once thought to be legitimate, that we have replaced with other no less indefensible institutions?

How do we see ourselves, the hurts we inflict on each other—the concern as much of Montaigne as of Shakespeare, of Rousseau and of Beccaria—of that very large company of civilized thinkers whose writings remain very important intellectual patrimonies? How can all this be placed in a context that takes account of the indignities produced by contemporary conditions, whether in the streets of the city, the hovels of the poor, the prisons of the condemned, or the villages where hundreds of millions still seek to find some way to sustain life? How, in short, are the contemporary humanities, social sciences, and natural sciences to deal with the theme of social suffering, recognizing that even for those who retain some faith in traditional religious explanations of suffering—which once commanded almost universal respect—there is a need to consider what social suffering is, what pain is inflicted on many tens of millions of ordinary men and women in disparate parts of the world, not least in our own century, and why the story of their plight, but also of their resilience, cannot be explained except by reference to the larger cultural, social, and political conditions of the contemporary world. It is not sympathy in the conventional sense that such study is intended to provoke, but sympathy as Adam Smith defined it in *The Theory of Moral Sentiments,* what we would today call empathy.

The real story of the century, in all its desperate cravings and fears, waits to be interpreted by men and women who are not concerned simply to win ideological battles. It matters enormously whether cultural, economic, political or other factors are used to explain the actions of those who inflict suffering on vast numbers, but also on how acquiescence or resistance is generated by these actions. As we reach another fin de siècle, with many showing themselves to be scarcely less apprehensive about the future than any number of sensitive men and women were a century ago, the opportunity to see our age as providing a unique occasion to view

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

war, revolution, and more commonplace events in a transnational context ought not to be lost. It is a good time for different and distant societies to be recognized as something other than exotic, departing from some presumed norm. Unprecedented research possibilities exist today, not least to study more than what the camera, including that of television, chooses to record. Our mass media—the press, no less than television—remain parochial, concerned overwhelmingly with what can only be thought ephemeral. It is the distinctive role of the scholar to give attention to what these others imagine not to be worth recording or reflecting on, to create the kinds of analyses that will make both the past and the present more vivid, more human.

If this is to happen, there must be more of the cross-disciplinary kinds of inquiry characteristic of so much represented in this issue of *Dædalus*. The narrow concern with an individual society, with a single element in a specific society, will not soon be eradicated, nor should it be. There are too many political and intellectual rewards to be gained from such inquiry, and it will of course continue. Still, the advantages to be gained from recognizing cultural differences, from seeing that the world is not simply a complex of identical forms, each replicating the other, is one of the major preconditions of a kind of interdisciplinary scholarship that is still too uncommon, that needs to be supported. At the end of the twentieth century, as at no time in the previous history of the world, there is an opportunity for new kinds of research across diverse societies. With social suffering, as with so many other themes, the possibilities of seeing the twentieth century in a new frame, with quite new dimensions, is compelling. It can only lead to a greater familiarity with the contemporary world, but also to new interpretations of historical conditions that have been either ignored or inadequately investigated. The anthropologist and the philosopher need not inhabit separate worlds; their texts are more numerous and more profitably examined when each understands what the other is doing. As for the natural scientist, it is time for the unique understandings of nature and human nature, which only such close study provides, to be brought to the table for the benefit of all.

So elaborated and worked over, "social suffering" calls for a linking of social policy with health policy, social theory and theory

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the humanities with health science and public health categories. More than that, all such efforts must seek to ground pragmatic programs and policies, which too often follow a pattern of simplification, in a historicized context that takes account of the complexity of the human condition. To achieve this will require a tolerance for interdisciplinary study—an advocacy of its intellectual possibilities—still very uncommon in our purportedly multicultural age.

A great debt is owed the three guest editors of this issue. Arthur Kleinman, Veena Das, and Margaret Lock have guided this ship into a safe port where we hope others, pursuing comparable researches, will soon join them. I am very grateful to them and to the other authors who agreed to embark on what all of us knew to be a precarious intellectual voyage.

S.R.G.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Introduction

SOCIAL SUFFERING, THE TOPIC OF THIS ISSUE of *Dædalus,* brings into a single space an assemblage of human problems that have their origins and consequences in the devastating injuries that social force inflicts on human experience. Social suffering results from what political, economic, and institutional power does to people, and, reciprocally, from how these forms of power themselves influence responses to social problems. Included under the category of social suffering are conditions that are usually divided among separate fields: health, welfare, and legal, moral, and religious issues. They destabilize established categories. For example, the trauma, pain, and disorders to which atrocity gives rise are health conditions, yet they are also political and cultural matters. Similarly, to say that poverty is the major risk factor for ill health and death is only another way of saying that health is a social indicator and indeed a social process.

The vicious spiral of political violence, causing forced uprooting, migration, and deep trauma to families and communities, while intensifying domestic abuse and personal suffering, spins out of control across a bureaucratic landscape of health, social welfare, and legal agencies. The gathering cycle churns through domestic and international agendas and threatens both local and global structures of security. At its brutal extremity in the Holocaust, or when it results from the "soft knife" of routine processes of ordinary oppression, social suffering ruins the collective and the intersubjective connections of experience and gravely damages subjectivity as well.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The cultural processes of rational-technical analysis that describe these human defeats and the technological interventions they authorize as "treatments" at times are effective, but all-too-regularly bureaucratic responses to social violence intensify suffering. This is caused by unforeseen and untoward moral, economic, and gender effects of policies and programs, and also by actions that end up normalizing social pathology or pathologizing the psychophysiology of terror. Cultural responses to the traumatic effects of political violence often transform the local idioms of victims into universalizing professional languages of complaint and restitution, and thereby remake both representations and experiences of suffering. Existential processes of pain, death, and mourning are metamorphosed by these historically shaped rationalities and technologies, which again all-too-regularly are inattentive to how the transformations they induce contribute to the suffering they seek to remedy.

The essays in this issue address these ominous problems in a different way. They collapse old dichotomies—for example, those that separate individual from social levels of analysis, health from social problems, representation from experience, suffering from intervention. From these anthropological, historical, critical literary, and social medicine perspectives, the standard dichotomies are barriers to understanding how the forms of human suffering can be at the same time collective and individual, how the modes of experiencing pain and trauma can be both local and global. Prior to forging new policies or lubricating creaky policy discourses, these essays argue that we need first to examine the most basic relationships between language and pain, image and suffering. The authors discuss why a language of dismay, disappointment, bereavement, and alarm that sounds not at all like the usual terminology of policy and programs may offer a more valid means for describing what is at stake in human experiences of political catastrophe and social structural violence, for professionals as much as for victims/perpetrators, and also may make better sense of how the clash among globalizing discourses and localized social realities so often ends up prolonging personal and collective tragedy.

The essays critically explore the ways our historically and culturally shaped commitments to particular versions of modernization construct moral quandaries, and how our usual practices of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

casting social experience as "natural" or "normal" obscure the greatly consequential workings of "power" in social life. Pursuing these destabilizing, interdisciplinary themes, the authors show the permeability between the borders of moral imagination, bodily affect, and social processes. They demonstrate that both the varieties of human misery and the various social scientific and literary analyses of these truly dangerous problems *interfuse,* so that it is no longer useful to insist upon artificial boundaries that divide an unruly world into tidy analytic chambers. The most interesting questions for theory and practice concerning social suffering are in the cracks between our categories and in the discursive processes that traverse our disciplines.

That ours is an age of the picture is more than a cliché. Experience, including experiences of social suffering, has been *mediatized.* War, plague, street violence, AIDS, and famine are all captured in their raw immediacy by the ubiquitous video camera. Social suffering is a feature of cultural representation both as spectacle and as the presentation of the real. But cultural technologies now exist to fashion the "real" in accord with the interests of power to a degree hardly imagined in the past. What W. J. T. Mitchell calls the gap between representation and responsibility is a master moral dilemma.[1] How we "picture" social suffering becomes that experience, for the observers and even for the sufferers/perpetrators. What we represent and how we represent it prefigure what we will, or will not, do to intervene. What is not pictured is not real. Much of routinized misery is invisible; much that is made visible is not ordinary or routine. The very act of picturing distorts social experience in the popular media and in the professions under the impress of ideology and political economy. So entailed, even personal "witnessing" is compromised. We are living through a great historical transformation in the imaging, and therefore perhaps also in the experience, of social adversity.

A major preoccupation in the Western tradition has to do with the incommunicability of pain, its capacity to isolate sufferers and strip them of cultural resources, including especially the resource of language. This incommunicability of pain arises from the asymmetry of access to experiential knowledge that it gives us. According to this view, to be in pain is to be certain about this knowledge. To be asked to react to another person's pain is to be in doubt

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

about its existence.[2] From the perspective of theories of *social* suffering, such a preoccupation with individual certainty and doubt simply seems a less interesting, less important question to ask than that of how such suffering is produced in societies and how acknowledgment of pain, as a cultural process, is given or withheld. After all, to be ignorant or incapable of imagining another's pain does not signal blindness in moral sensibility in the same way in which the incapacity to *acknowledge* that pain does.[3] Yet, this latter failure is at the bottom of the cultural process of political abuse.

Many of the essays in this issue formulate questions of social suffering in relation to the problem of language. Only an excessive allegiance to the referential theory of language would lead us to privilege its pointing function in relation to experiences like pain. For one thing, that would construct the inner geography of a person as if it were a replica of the external geography of the physical world. But more than that, such a theory would have no place for the performative aspects of language, or for the role of the speech genre of a society to mold the experience of suffering so that certain experiences of pain and grieving become expressible while others are shrouded in silence. And, furthermore, while experience is shaped by representations, it can also push against these representations—resisting language, bending it in new directions, and distorting the received ways of expressing distress and desperation so that these distortions themselves transform the experience of suffering.

The essays in this issue illustrate great variations in historical and cultural styles of suffering, but they are not content in describing differences—e.g., the value placed on "enduring" hardship as a moral practice in China, of pronouncing on the incoherent, chaotic nature of the gods in mourning laments in India, or on resisting redefinition of "death" in Japan. One could multiply examples of variation endlessly. Instead, the essays tell of cultural ruptures and new, globalized suturings.

For example, Vera Schwarcz describes the vicissitudes of silent endurance and indirect expression of the trauma of political oppression as traditional moral modes of suffering among Chinese intellectuals engaged in the project of modernization. The cultural mode of directly "speaking bitterness," through which, for example, abused peasant women were liberated by their new Com-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

munist masters to hurl the residue of that experience of abuse back at erstwhile landlords and patriarchs, hundreds of thousands of whom subsequently were put to death, occurred in an era of radical change that Tu Wei-ming regards as one of unprecedented "destruction of life, property, institutions, traditions, and values." The new discourse community that crystallized around Maoism created, for the first time in the Chinese tradition, a union between diffused processes of political control, an inversionary ideology that reversed the Confucian order, and control over the language of moral approbation and critique, which had traditionally belonged to scholar-bureaucrats. Under the guise of rationality and democracy, Tu shows, these practices created the moral-political instruments of immense societal suffering.

In a different context, Veena Das describes the magnification of the images of nation in the anticolonial movements in India, where men came to appropriate the bodies of women as cultural media, through which the new political programs would be expressed. Of the cultural processes of destruction unleashed by the Partition of India, Das finds ghostly apparitions in the register of the social imaginary. If the cultural project of modernity led to disappointment about the possibilities of human emancipation, so did projects of conserving tradition fail to promise deliverance. This experience of disappointment with cultural resources, with language, with culture itself, a sensibility of a grand illusion, perhaps even of a deception, Das suggests, defines a key dimension of human societies in our bloody times, because experiences of social suffering in the middle of massive human destruction thrust against the limits of representations, received or newly created. Paradoxically, Das observes, cultural disappointment is not without rewards. It becomes possible in the ethos of disappointment for persons to acknowledge the pain of the other. This cultural opening is made possible not through the mediation of established genres. Rather, it is the failure of those genres and the dismay of the moral communities anchoring them that sometimes enable acknowledgment of the uniqueness of being, of the suffering of the other. Stanley Cavell's philosophical reading of Das's essay in social theory suggests why the relationship of suffering to meaning-making and other everyday cultural practices must be worked through if interventions (academic and practical) are to be ad-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

equate to the complexity of human problems and not romanticize or trivialize human conditions.

Lawrence Langer, however, cautions against the temptation of finding meaning (large or small) and thereby humanizing extreme atrocity. Writing on the Holocaust, he is concerned not so much with the uniqueness of the historical event of the bureaucratized destruction of European Jewry but with the fact that to find models to make sense of the suffering of the Jews in religious or literary texts (or professional discourse) "normalizes" that which can never be normalized, never rationalized. He finds attempts to explain extreme atrocity naive, as he does the understandable but, to his way of thinking, misguided efforts to cure survivors of their trauma. Massive social suffering does not lend itself to metaphors of rescue or remedy. (Anyway, the six million who were murdered are beyond healing.) For Langer, survivors live in the chronological time of ordinary life experience, but they also still inhabit, and are inhabited by, durational time, a frozen time, a continuously experienced duration of atrocity that can neither be transcended nor generalized. All efforts at interpreting atrocity, for Langer, must begin with individual narratives of the "unappeasable experience" of durational time. He advocates cultivation of a language of diminished possibility, a rhetoric of consternation that eschews teleology and especially salvational longings. But above all, he argues for an alarmed vision, an alerted way of looking at the world that expects danger, a vision that would constantly look out for atrocity and prepare people to respond. If it sounds like survivalist tactics on the collective level, that is indeed part of the only moral lesson Langer seems willing to accept from the extreme suffering of victims of the Holocaust: disheartenment and alarm.

The theme of disappointment with both tradition and modernity arises again, in a troubling irony, in Anne Harrington's discussion of the relationship between holism and Nazi medicine. That a humanistic critique of scientific objectification in biomedicine was appropriated by National Socialism may not destabilize our picture of the Nazis nearly as much as it does the idea of cultural critique as a means of unmasking the sources of human suffering. For Harrington, the products of our moral imagination—in this case the critique of objectification in biomedicine—can be politically appropriated by the very forces that produce

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

social suffering to hide immediate horror under the seductive ideology of a distant ideal. Cultural critique and reform of biomedicine came to legitimate a new social order in Nazi Germany rather than challenge that order. Both tradition and modernity failed to offer effective resistance to cultural appropriation by the most dangerous of political programs.

Political-moral misadventures of social appropriations of suffering are the subjects of several other papers. The Kleinmans examine the processes through which popular, professional, and political appropriations of images of suffering appeal to the experiences of distant audiences. In so doing, those representations authorize transformations of social experience, including ominous historical change in experiences of suffering in our own epoch. What is the effect upon social experience of the trivialization of suffering by the corporative media, or its hypocritical distortion by marketing the victim as a hero? Voyeurism is another outcome of construing suffering at a safe distance, without the social responsibility of real engagement.

Mamphela Ramphele's autobiographical account, an analysis of the political uses to which the experiences of bereavement of political widows are put, examines a telling ethnographic instance of the appropriation of social suffering. Here, the dialectics of social life that remake the heterogeneity of private grief into homogenized stereotypes of public mourning are shown to damage women's experience. Neither programs of modernization nor the reinvention of tradition succeed in resolving a tension that comes close to an existential limit condition. In this essay and in others in this issue, the problem of suffering appears very different when we do away with the classic dualisms of social analysis. Suffering becomes a process of social mediation and transformation. It is experienced within nested contexts of embodiment: collective, intersubjective, individual. It absorbs into the body-self the moral world's contradictory obligations/rights and the norms/contestations of the body politic.

Margaret Lock reminds us of the profound diversity of what is fundamentally at stake in those different cultural nexuses that can generate and sustain greatly different responses to suffering. Thus, debates over the experience of dying and the definition of death in Japan and North America may be driven by certain of the same

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

global processes of technological rationalization and political economy, yet they differ enormously owing to the particularities of history, religion, and local traditions of conceiving and doing biomedicine. As we "master" nature, Lock demonstrates, the form that suffering takes, the construction of needs and deficiencies, is actually created by the very technology designed to alleviate suffering. The cultural appropriation through technology of what was formerly taken as "natural," and therefore largely beyond our control, has changed our expectations about, for example, events such as birth, illness, and death. Increasingly we assume that the production of perfect babies, an extended life span, and the elimination of disease is within our grasp; anything short of this incites suffering. This tendency is particularly dangerous because such suffering is hypothetical and not grounded in either critical politics or everyday reality.

Lock's paper, and Allan Young's as well, builds upon an understanding of the infiltration of the concept of normality, under the rationalized bureaucratic apparatus of the modern state, from medicine into many other domains of ordinary life.[4] "People, behavior, states of affairs, diplomatic relations, molecules: all these may be normal or abnormal."[5] The concept of normality closes the gap between "is" and "ought." Two ideas are contained in the one concept of the normal: preservation and amelioration. There can be little doubt that technologies applied today, purportedly to reduce suffering, such as those aimed at controlling female reproductive physiology and the genome, are often at the same time designed to create or reassert the normal. Lock traces the normalization/pathologization of death and transplantation; Young reviews the history of the pathological memory as a cultural process for making people as much as for constructing disease entities. Fear, Young shows, is central to the kind of memory, person, and disorder that was being constructed at the turn of the nineteenth century. And it is still central to the kind of memory, person, and disorder that is being constructed in our own age of posttraumatic stress. Death and fear point to the connections between politics and experience that lie at the very heart of social life, connecting social memory and individual practice, suffering and society.

Paul Farmer's essay shows how the politics of culture and ethnicity can obscure the workings of poverty and international relations in

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the transmission of AIDS and tuberculosis in Haiti. Globally, poverty is the major risk factor for these disorders, as it is for most other forms of social suffering. There is an unjust distribution of disease and health care that characterizes both the old and the new world order, and that gap between rich and poor is worsening. Health policy and social policy are inseparable. Farmer's case histories also disclose that the brutal local effects of global political and economic forces coerce the moral economy of policies and programs as well as the distribution of adversity and woe.

The question of social suffering brings a stubbornly moral orientation to social analysis. It has been a foundational question for religions, political movements, the helping professions, and social policy. As David Morris observes in his review of its place and uses in the Western literary tradition, suffering is about the voices (and silences) as well as the genres of moral communities that range from the local to the global. The essays in this issue demonstrate that we have gone beyond the point where this subject can be examined as a single theme or a uniform experience. That an abiding human concern about an existential process also contributes to the definition of what being human is about means that suffering is profoundly *social* in the sense that it helps constitute the social world. Social suffering possesses these meanings amongst others. Our intention has been to deepen a conversation, from ethnographic, social historical, critical humanities, and social medicine perspectives, in order to come to a more complexly human understanding of the relationship of theory to policy. To engage human problems, we hold, is to engage this moral, political, and cultural nexus.

It is not that concern with discrete issues such as disease eradication, control of crime and violence, and intervention for poverty has been lacking in the administrative discourses of planning and policy, or in the research that informs them. (Far from it!) But because of the manner in which knowledge and institutions are organized in the contemporary world as pragmatically-oriented programs of welfare, health, social development, social justice, security, and so on, the phenomenon of suffering as an experiential domain of everyday social life has been splintered into measurable attributes. These attributes are then managed by bureaucratic institutions and expert cultures that reify the fragmentation while casting a veil of misrecognition over the domain as a whole (be-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

cause if seen as a whole it would be too threatening?). As a result, neither a trans-sectoral framework of analysis nor interdisciplinary theories are made visible. By returning to the primacy of the phenomenological domain of experiences of suffering in a broad social context, we seek to show that what one expert defines as the object of health policy and another as the object of economic policy can and must be viewed in a frame that integrates these and yet other human problems—a frame that names a large domain of the sources, forms, and consequences of social life. In order to intervene in that domain, we need to ground responses, with the aid of social maps and social theories, in new and more humanly valid ways of refiguring the predicaments of our time.

The essays were discussed at a Conference held at the Rockefeller Foundation's Bellagio Center in July 1994. The Conference was organized as part of the Social Science Research Council's Committee on Culture, Health, and Human Development, which sponsors a program on Culture, Suffering, and Social Change. The funding for the Committee came from the MacArthur Foundation. The editors acknowledge with pleasure their appreciation for the support received from the MacArthur Foundation, the Rockefeller Foundation, the Bellagio Conference Center staff, the Social Science Research Council, and in particular Drs. Robert Lawrence, Denis Prager, Robert Rose, and especially Dr. Frank Kessel and Ms. Diana Colbert. They also thank all the participants in the Conference, including especially Dr. Stephen Graubard.

Arthur Kleinman
Veena Das
Margaret Lock

ENDNOTES

[1]W. J. T. Mitchell, *Picture Theory: Essays on Verbal and Visual Representation* (Chicago, Ill. and London: University of Chicago Press, 1994), 421–25.

[2]Elaine Scarry, *The Body in Pain* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1986).

[3]Stanley Cavell, *Must We Mean What We Say?* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1976), 242–66.

[4]Georges Canguilhem, *The Normal and the Pathological,* trans. Carolyn R. Fawcett and Robert S. Cohen (New York: Zone Books, 1989); Michel Foucault, *Discipline and Punish: The Birth of the Prison,* trans. Alan Sheridan (New York: Vintage, 1979); Ian Hacking, *The Taming of Chance* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1990).

[5]Hacking, *The Taming of Chance*, 160.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman

The Appeal of Experience; The Dismay of Images: Cultural Appropriations of Suffering in Our Times

ORIENTATION

SUFFERING IS ONE OF THE EXISTENTIAL GROUNDS of human experience; it is a defining quality, a limiting experience in human conditions.[1] It is also a master subject of our mediatized times. Images of victims of natural disasters, political conflict, forced migration, famine, substance abuse, the HIV pandemic, chronic illnesses of dozens of kinds, crime, domestic abuse, and the deep privations of destitution are everywhere. Video cameras take us into the intimate details of pain and misfortune.

Images of suffering are appropriated to appeal emotionally and morally both to global audiences and to local populations. Indeed, those images have become an important part of the media. As "infotainment" on the nightly news, images of victims are commercialized; they are taken up into processes of global marketing and business competition. The existential appeal of human experiences, their potential to mobilize popular sentiment and collective action, and even their capability to witness or offer testimony are now available for gaining market share. Suffering, "though at a

Arthur Kleinman is Maude and Lillian Presley Professor of Medical Anthropology, Chairman of the Department of Social Medicine, and Professor of Psychiatry at Harvard Medical School; and Professor of Anthropology at Harvard University.

Joan Kleinman, a sinologist, is Research Associate, Medical Anthropology Program at Harvard University.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

distance," as the French sociologist Luc Boltanski tellingly expresses it, is routinely appropriated in American popular culture, which is a leading edge of global popular culture.[2] This globalization of suffering is one of the more troubling signs of the cultural transformations of the current era: troubling because experience is being used as a commodity, and through this cultural representation of suffering, experience is being remade, thinned out, and distorted.

It is important to avoid essentializing, naturalizing, or sentimentalizing suffering. There is no single way to suffer; there is no timeless or spaceless universal shape to suffering. There are communities in which suffering is devalued and others in which it is endowed with the utmost significance. The meanings and modes of the experience of suffering have been shown by historians and anthropologists alike to be greatly diverse.[3] Individuals do not suffer in the same way, any more than they live, talk about what is at stake, or respond to serious problems in the same ways. Pain is perceived and expressed differently, even in the same community.[4] Extreme forms of suffering—survival from the Nazi death camps or the Cambodian catastrophe—are not the same as the "ordinary" experiences of poverty and illness.[5]

We can speak of suffering as a social experience in at least two ways that are relevant to this essay: *1)* Collective modes of experience shape individual perceptions and expressions. Those collective modes are visible patterns of how to undergo troubles, and they are taught and learned, sometimes openly, often indirectly. *2)* Social interactions enter into an illness experience (for example, a family dealing with the dementia of a member with Alzheimer's disease or a close network grieving for a member with terminal cancer). As these examples suggest, relationships and interactions take part, sometimes a central part, in the experience of suffering.[6] Both aspects of social experience—its collective mode and intersubjective processes—can be shown to be reshaped by the distinctive cultural meanings of time and place. Cultural representations, authorized by a moral community and its institutions, elaborate different modes of suffering. Yet, local differences—in gender, age group, class, ethnicity, and, of course, subjectivity—as well as the penetration of global processes into local worlds make this social influence partial and complex.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

It is this aspect of suffering that this essay addresses by way of an analysis of the cultural and political processes that contribute to professional appropriations of suffering, processes that have important moral implications. To what uses are experiences of suffering put? What are the consequences of those cultural practices for understanding and responding to human problems? And what are the more general implications of the cultural appropriations of suffering for human experience, including human experiences of suffering?

PROFESSIONAL APPROPRIATIONS OF THE IMAGES OF SUFFERING: PHOTOJOURNALISM AND PUBLIC HEALTH

Image I.

Source: Kevin Carter, *The New York Times*, 26 March 1993. © 1993 by Sygma.

This photograph won a Pulitzer Prize for *The New York Times*. In the April 13, 1994 issue of the *Times*, there was a full-page advertisement taken out by the *Times*' owners in recognition of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the three Pulitzer Prizes that it won that year. The *Times* described this award-winning picture in the following way:

> To *The New York Times,* for Kevin Carter's photograph of a vulture perching near a little girl in the Sudan who has collapsed from hunger, a picture that became an icon of starvation.

When the photograph first appeared, it accompanied a story of the famine that has once again resulted from political violence and the chaos of civil war in the southern Sudan.[7] The *Times'* self-congratulatory account fails to adequately evoke the image's shocking effect. The child is hardly larger than an infant; she is naked; she appears bowed over in weakness and sickness, incapable, it would seem, of moving; she is unprotected. No mother, no family, no one is present to prevent her from being attacked by the vulture, or succumbing to starvation and then being eaten. The image suggests that she has been abandoned. Why? The reader again is led to imagine various scenarios of suffering: she has been lost in the chaos of forced uprooting; her family has died; she has been deserted near death in order for her mother to hold on to more viable children. The image's great success is that it causes the reader to want to know more. Why is this innocent victim of civil war and famine unprotected? The vulture embodies danger and evil, but the greater dangers and real forces of evil are not in the "natural world"; they are in the political world, including those nearby in army uniforms or in government offices in Khartoum. Famine has become a political strategy in the Sudan.[8]

The photograph has been reprinted many times, and it has been duplicated in advertisements for a number of nongovernmental aid agencies that are raising funds to provide food to refugees. This is a classic instance of the use of moral sentiment to mobilize support for social action. One cannot look at this picture without wanting to do something to protect the child and drive the vulture away. Or, as one aid agency puts it, to prevent other children from succumbing in the same heartlessly inhuman way by giving a donation.

The photograph calls for words to answer other questions. How did Carter allow the vulture to get so close without doing something to protect the child? What did he do after the picture was taken? Was it in some sense posed? Inasmuch as Kevin Carter

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

chose to take the time, minutes that may have been critical at this point when she is near death, to compose an effective picture rather than to save the child, is he complicit?

Those moral questions particular to Carter's relationship (or nonrelationship) to the dying child were only intensified when, on July 29, 1994, a few months after the Pulitzer Prize announcement, *The New York Times* ran an obituary for Kevin Carter, who had committed suicide at age thirty-three. That shocking notice of his death, written by Bill Keller, the *Times'* Johannesburg correspondent, as well as a longer article by Scott Mac Leod in *Time* magazine on September 12, reported Carter's clarifications about how he took the photograph and what followed:[9]

> . . .he wandered into the open bush. He heard a soft, high-pitched whimpering and saw a tiny girl trying to make her way to the feeding center. As he crouched to photograph her, a vulture landed in view. Careful not to disturb the bird, he positioned himself for the best possible image. He would later say he waited about 20 minutes, hoping the vulture would spread its wings. It did not, and after he took his photographs, he chased the bird away and watched as the little girl resumed her struggle. Afterwards he sat under a tree, lit a cigarette, talked to God and cried. He was depressed afterward. . . .He kept saying he wanted to hug his daughter.[10]

The *Times'* obituary ends with a section entitled "The Horror of the Work," in which Jimmy Carter, Kevin's father, observes that his son "Always carried around the horror of the work he did." Keller implies that it was the burden of this "horror" that may have driven Carter to suicide. The article by Scott Mac Leod in *Time* shows that Kevin Carter had lived a very troubled life, with drug abuse, a messy divorce, deep financial problems, brushes with the police, and was a manic-depressive. We also learn that he had spent much of his career photographing political repression and violence in South Africa, and that he had been deeply affected by the shooting of his best friend and coworker, Ken Oosterbrock, for whom, he told friends, he "should have taken the bullet."[11] His suicide note, besides mentioning these other problems, comes back to the theme of the burden of horror: "I am haunted by the vivid memories of killings and corpses and anger and pain. . .of starving or wounded children, of trigger-happy madmen, often police, of killer executioners. . . . "[12]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

From Scott Mac Leod we also learn that Carter had been present at the execution of right-wing paramilitary men in Bophuthatswana; much to his annoyance he had missed the master image snapped by his colleagues of a white mercenary pleading for his life before being executed—a picture that also was reprinted by newspapers around the globe. The article in *Time* reports that Carter was painfully aware of the photojournalist's dilemma:

> "I had to think visually," he said once, describing a shoot-out. "I am zooming in on a tight shot of the dead guy and a splash of red. Going into his khaki uniform in a pool of blood in the sand. The dead man's face is slightly grey. You are making a visual here. But inside something is screaming, 'My God.' But it is time to work. Deal with the rest later. . . ."[13]

Time magazine's writer discovered that some journalists questioned Carter's ethics: "The man adjusting his lens to take just the right frame of her suffering. . .might just as well be a predator, another vulture on the scene." Scott Mac Leod notes that even some of Carter's friends "wondered aloud why he had not helped the girl."[14]

It is easy to moralize about how Carter's professional success was a result of his failure to act humanely. To balance the account, we need to remember that many photographers and journalists have been killed this year covering some of the more violent political conflicts around the world. "Hardly career advancement," cautioned Bill Kovach, Curator of Harvard's Nieman Foundation, in response to an earlier version of this paper. Kevin Carter's career is as much a story of courage and professionalism as it is a tale of moral failure. Moreover, the photograph he created provided political testimony and drove people to act. Photojournalists, like Kevin Carter, contribute to a global humanitarian effort to prevent silence. That is a considerable contribution.

Having learned about Carter's suicide, the prize-winning image, an anonymously public icon of suffering at a distance, becomes part of close experience. Kevin Carter is transformed from a name on the side of the photograph to a narrative, a story that is emplotted with a classic example of Joseph Conrad's depiction of Africa as the heart of darkness, the site of social horror. Carter becomes a subject in the cultural story his photograph helped

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

write by being transformed, infected more than affected, by what he had to bear.

But what of the horrors experienced by the little Sudanese girl, who is given neither a name nor a local moral world? The tension of uncertainty is unrelieved. Only now, with the story of Carter's suicide, the suffering of the representer and the represented interfuses. Professional representation as well as popular interpretations would have us separate the two: one a powerless local victim, the other a powerful foreign professional.[15] Yet, the account of Carter's suicide creates a more complex reality. The disintegration of the subject/object dichotomy implicates us all. The theories of a variety of academic professions may help explain how Carter got us into this situation of bringing the global into the local, but they fail to explain how we will get ourselves out of the moral complexities he has intensified for us by projecting the local into the global.[16] We are left only with the unsentimentalized limits of the human condition—a silence seemingly without meaning, possibly without solace. And still the world calls for images: the mixture of moral failures and global commerce is here to stay.[17]

Without disputing the photograph's immense achievement, it is useful to explore its moral and political assumptions.[18] There is, for example, the unstated idea that this group of unnamed Africans (are they Nuer or Dinka?) cannot protect their own. They must be protected, as well as represented, by others. The image of the subaltern conjures up an almost neocolonial ideology of failure, inadequacy, passivity, fatalism, and inevitability.[19] Something must be done, and it must be done soon, but *from outside* the local setting. The authorization of action through an appeal for foreign aid, even foreign intervention, begins with an evocation of indigenous absence, an erasure of local voices and acts.

Suffering is presented as if it existed free of local people and local worlds. The child is alone. This, of course, is not the way that disasters, illnesses, and deaths are usually dealt with in African or other non-Western societies, or, for that matter, in the West. Yet, the image of famine is culturally represented in an ideologically Western mode: it becomes the experience of a lone individual.[20] The next step, naturally, is to assume that there are no local institutions or programs. That assumption almost invariably leads to the development of regional or national policies that are im-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

posed on local worlds. When those localities end up resisting or not complying with policies and programs that are meant to assist them, such acts are then labeled irrational or self-destructive. The local world is deemed incompetent, or worse.

This may seem too thoroughgoing a critique. Clearly, witnessing and mobilization can do good, but they work best when they take seriously the complexity of local situations and work through local institutions. Moral witnessing also must involve a sensitivity to other, unspoken moral and political assumptions. Watching and reading about suffering, especially suffering that exists somewhere else, has, as we have already noted, become a form of entertainment. Images of trauma are part of our political economy. Papers are sold, television programs gain audience share, careers are advanced, jobs are created, and prizes are awarded through the appropriation of images of suffering. Kevin Carter won the Pulitzer Prize, but his victory, substantial as it was, was won because of the misery (and probable death) of a nameless little girl. That more dubious side of the appropriation of human misery in the globalization of cultural processes is what must be addressed.

One message that comes across from viewing suffering from a distance is that for all the havoc in Western society, we are somehow better than this African society. We gain in moral status and some of our organizations gain financially and politically, while those whom we represent, or appropriate, remain where they are, moribund, surrounded by vultures. This "consumption" of suffering in an era of so-called "disordered capitalism" is not so very different from the late nineteenth-century view that the savage barbarism in pagan lands justified the valuing of our own civilization at a higher level of development—a view that authorized colonial exploitation. Both are forms of cultural representation in which the moral, the commercial, and the political are deeply involved in each other. The point is that the image of the vulture and the child carries cultural entailments, including the brutal historical genealogy of colonialism as well as the dubious cultural baggage of the more recent programs of "modernization" and globalization (of markets and financing), that have too often worsened human problems in sub-Saharan Africa.[21]

Another effect of the postmodern world's political and economic appropriation of images of such serious forms of suffering

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

at a distance is that it has desensitized the viewer. Viewers are overwhelmed by the sheer number of atrocities. There is too much to see, and there appears to be too much to do anything about. Thus, our epoch's dominating sense that complex problems can be neither understood nor fixed works with the massive globalization of images of suffering to produce moral fatigue, exhaustion of empathy, and political despair.

The appeal of experience is when we see on television a wounded Haitian, surrounded by a threatening crowd, protesting accusations that he is a member of a murderous paramilitary organization. The dismay of images is when we are shown that the man and the crowd are themselves surrounded by photographers, whose participation helps determine the direction the event will take.[22] The appeal of experience and the dismay of images fuse together in Kevin Carter's photograph, and in the story of his suicide. The photograph is a professional transformation of social life, a politically relevant rhetoric, a constructed form that ironically naturalizes experience. As Michael Shapiro puts it,

> . . .representation is the absence of presence, but because the real is never wholly present to us—how it is real for us is always mediated through some representational practice—we lose something when we think of representation as mimetic. What we lose, in general, is insight into the institutions and actions and episodes through which the real has been fashioned, a fashioning that has not been so much a matter of immediate acts of consciousness by persons in everyday life as it has been a historically developing kind of imposition, now largely institutionalized in the prevailing kinds of meanings deeply inscribed on things, persons, and structures.[23]

This cultural process of professional and political transformation is crucial to the way we come to appreciate human problems and to prepare policy responses. That appreciation and preparation far too often are part of the problem; they become iatrogenic.

PATHOLOGIZING SOCIAL SUFFERING

When those whose suffering is appropriated by the media cross over to places of refuge and safety, they often must submit to yet another type of arrogation.[24] Their memories (their intimately

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

interior images) of violation are made over into *trauma stories*. These trauma stories then become the currency, the symbolic capital, with which they enter exchanges for physical resources and achieve the status of political refugee. Increasingly, those complicated stories, based in real events, yet reduced to a core cultural image of *victimization* (a postmodern hallmark), are used by health professionals to rewrite social experience in medical terms. The person who undergoes torture first becomes a victim, an image of innocence and passivity, someone who cannot represent himself, who must be represented. Then he becomes a patient, specifically a patient with a quintessential fin de siècle disorder (i.e., posttraumatic stress disorder).[25] Indeed, to receive even modest public assistance it may be necessary to undergo a sequential transformation from one who experiences, who suffers political terror to one who is a victim of political violence to one who is sick, who has a disease. Because of the practical political and financial importance of such transformations, the violated themselves may want, and even seek out, the re-imaging of their condition so that they can obtain the moral as well as the financial benefits of being ill. We need to ask, however, what kind of cultural process underpins the transformation of a victim of violence to someone with a pathology? What does it mean to give those traumatized by political violence the social status of a patient? And in what way does the imagery of victimization as the pathology of an individual alter the experience—collective as well as individual—so that its lived meaning as moral and political memory, perhaps even resistance, is lost and is replaced by "guilt," "paranoia," and a "failure to cope"?

There is an uncomfortable irony here. There is an uncanny and unnecessary correlation between the aesthetics of murder in Guatemala, Rwanda, and Bosnia and the way in which those deaths are reported in the news. We are shown close-ups of limbs blown off by mortars and landmines. In low intensity warfare directed at terrorizing populations, people are not just killed; they are hacked into pieces, blown up, torn apart, burned, and broken. And all the details are dramatically displayed for us. Thus, the cultural capital of trauma victims—their wounds, their scars, their tragedy—is appropriated by the same popular codes through which physical and sexual violence are commodified, sold in the cinema, mar-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

keted as pornography, and used by tabloids and novelists to attract readers. Spectacular forms of trauma from abroad hold another significance as well: they consume our interest and deflect attention from routinized misery at home.

The aesthetization of child sexual abuse is another case in point. Appearing in *The New York Times* of April 9, 1993 was a picture of a child prostitute in the red-light district of old Dhaka, Bangladesh. The prepubescent girl is shown bare-chested, wearing a Lolita smile, a tousled adult hairstyle, many bangles on her arms, earrings, and a necklace. Behind her small, thin figure looms someone who appears to be her brothel-keeper, grim, mustached, one hand near his groin. Behind them are the filthy walls of an alley; another prostitute or a customer stands off to one side. The accompanying story is titled, "The Sex Market: Scourge on the World's Children." Outside the context of a major newspaper, this picture would qualify as child pornography. The purpose of the picture and the accompanying story is to expose the degradation of child prostitution, a phenomenon greatly increasing in the era of AIDS. But the picture simultaneously appeals, probably not entirely without intention, to a prurient sensibility. It is clearly not enough to picture a child's body for sale; the picture needs to recreate the atmosphere of sexual desire. Thus, the media, by the success of its artistry, gets caught up in the very processes it seeks to criticize.

We now turn to explore a different form of the transformation of social suffering. In recent years, experts in international health and social development, for very appropriate reasons, have sought to develop new ways of configuring the human misery that results from chronic disease and disability. Faced with the problem of increasing numbers of cases of chronic illness—diabetes, heart disease, cancer, asthma, depression, schizophrenia—as populations live long enough to experience degenerative diseases and other health conditions of later life, health professionals have realized that mortality rates are unable to represent the distress, disablement, and especially the *cost* of these conditions. Therefore, they have sought to construct new metrics to measure the suffering from chronic illness, which in medical and public health argot is called "morbidity." These metrics can be applied, the experts claim, to measure the burden of suffering in "objective" terms that can enable the just allocation of resources to those most in need.[26]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

One metric of suffering recently developed by the World Bank has gained wide attention and considerable support.[27] *Image II* describes what the World Bank's health economists mean by the term Disability Adjusted Life Years (DALYs). *Table 1* shows the result of the application of DALYs to measure the cost of suffering from illnesses globally. It emphasizes the significant percentage of loss in DALYs due to mental health problems. This finding, one would suppose, should help make the case for giving mental health problems—suicide, mental illnesses, trauma due to violence, substance abuse—higher priority so that greater resources can be applied to them. In fact, the cost of mental health problems are placed by the World Bank in the discretionary category so that the state is not held responsible for that burden. This is a serious problem that requires fundamental change in the way suffering from mental health problems is prioritized by the World Bank. But here we ask a different question: What kind of cultural representation and professional appropriation of suffering is this?

Image II. Disability Adjusted Life Years

The World Bank's estimates of lost years of quality life hinges on the concept of Disability Adjusted Life Years (DALYs), which is a measure of the burden produced by specific diseases; it combines the impact of the premature deaths and of the disablements that result from those diseases. In taking death at a given age into account, the number of *years of life lost* is evaluated by using the expectation of life remaining at that age to individuals in low mortality countries. Years of life do not have the same value throughout the life span; thus, most people value a year in their twenties as worth three or four times what a year in the eighties is worth. This differential evaluation is taken into account in the calculation. To measure the disability resulting from disease, each surviving year is modified according to the expected *duration* and *severity* of the disability. Duration is simply the years (or fractions thereof) that the disability lasts. Severity represents the comparative disadvantage of a given handicap on a scale from 0, for perfect health, to 1, for death. For example, expert panels have rated blindness at a severity of 0.6, and disease of the female reproductive system at a severity of 0.22. Losses from death and disability are combined. In calculating DALYs, the formula takes into account the age at which the specific disease is acquired, the years of life expectancy lost (and the relative value of those years), and the years compromised by handicap.

Source: Robert Desjarlais et al., *World Mental Health: Problems and Priorities in Low-Income Countries* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1995), 295.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Table 1. Distribution of DALY Loss by Cause and Demographic Region, 1990 (percent)

Cause	World	Sub-Saharan Africa	India	China	Other Asia & Islands	Latin America & Caribbean	Middle Eastern Crescent	Former Socialist Economies of Europe	Established Market Economies
Population (millions)	5,267.0	510.0	850.0	1,134.0	683.0	444.0	603.0	346.0	798.0
Noncommunicable diseases	***42.2%***	***19.4%***	***40.4%***	***68.0%***	***40.1%***	***42.8%***	***36.0%***	***74.8%***	***78.4%***
Neuropsychiatric disease	6.8	3.3	6.1	8.0	7.0	8.0	6.6	11.1	16.0
Cancer	5.8	1.5	4.1	9.2	4.4	6.2	3.4	14.8	19.1
Nutritional deficiencies	3.9	2.8	6.2	3.3	4.6	4.6	3.7	1.4	1.7
Cerebrovascular disease	3.2	1.5	2.1	6.3	2.1	2.6	2.4	8.8	6.3
Ischemic heart disease	3.1	0.4	2.8	2.1	3.5	2.7	1.8	13.7	10.0
Pulmonary obstruction	1.3	0.2	0.6	6.6	0.5	0.7	0.6	1.6	1.7
Other	18.0	9.7	18.5	23.6	17.9	19.1	18.7	23.4	26.6
Injuries	***11.9%***	***9.3%***	***9.1%***	***16.7%***	***11.3%***	***16.0%***	***13.0%***	***16.6%***	***11.9%***
Motor vehicle	2.3	1.3	1.1	2.3	2.3	5.7	3.3	3.7	3.6
Intentional	3.7	4.2	1.2	6.1	3.2	4.3	6.2	4.8	4.0
Other	5.9	3.9	6.8	9.3	5.8	6.0	4.6	8.1	4.3
Communicable diseases	***45.8%***	***71.3%***	***50.3%***	***25.3%***	***48.6%***	***42.2%***	***51.0%***	***8.6%***	***9.7%***
Tuberculosis	3.4	4.7	3.7	2.9	6.1	2.5	2.8	0.6	0.2
STDs & HIV	3.8	8.8	2.7	1.7	1.6	6.6	0.7	1.2	3.4
Diarrhea	7.3	10.2	9.6	2.1	8.3	5.7	10.7	0.4	0.3
Vaccine-preventable childhood infections	5.0	9.6	6.7	0.9	4.5	1.6	6.0	0.1	0.1
Malaria	2.6	10.8	0.3		1.4	0.4	0.2		
Worm infections	1.8	1.8	0.9	3.4	3.4	2.5	0.4		
Respiratory infections	9.0	10.8	10.9	6.4	11.1	6.2	11.6	2.6	2.6
Maternal causes	2.2	2.7	2.7	1.2	2.5	1.7	2.9	0.8	0.6
Perinatal causes	7.3	7.1	9.1	5.2	7.4	9.1	10.9	2.4	2.2
Other	3.5	4.6	4.0	1.4	3.3	6.8	4.9	0.6	0.5
Total	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***	***100.0%***
DALYs (millions)	1,362.0	293.0	292.0	201.0	177.0	103.0	144.0	68.0	94.0
Equivalent infant deaths (millions)	42.0	9.0	9.0	6.2	6.5	3.2	4.4	1.8	2.9
DALYs per 1000 population	259.0	575.0	344.0	178.0	260.0	233.0	286.0	168.0	117.0

Source: Adapted from World Bank, *World Development Report 1993: Investing in Health* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1993), 27.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

This metric of suffering was constructed by assigning degrees of suffering to years of life and types of disability. The assumption is that values will be universal. They will not vary across worlds as greatly different as China, India, sub-Saharan Africa, and North America. They will also be reducible to measures of economic cost. That expert panels rate blindness with a severity of 0.6, while female reproductive system disorders are evaluated at one third the severity is surely a cause for questioning whether gender bias is present, but more generally it should make one uneasy with the means by which evaluations of severity and its cost can be validly standardized across different societies, social classes, age cohorts, genders, ethnicities, and occupational groups.

The effort to develop an objective indicator may be important for rational choice concerning allocation of scarce resources among different policies and programs. (It certainly should support the importance of funding mental health programs, even though as it is presently used in the World Bank's *World Development Report* it does not lead to this conclusion.) But it is equally important to question what are the limits and the potential dangers of configuring social suffering as an economic indicator. The moral and political issues we have raised in this essay cannot be made to fit into this econometric index. Likewise, the index is unable to map cultural, ethnic, and gender differences. Indeed, it assumes homogeneity in the evaluation and response to illness experiences, which belies an enormous amount of anthropological, historical, and clinical evidence of substantial differences in each of these domains.[28] Professional categories are privileged over lay categories, yet the experience of illness is expressed in lay terms.

Furthermore, the index focuses on the individual sufferer, denying that suffering is a social experience. This terribly thin representation of a thickly human condition may in time also thin out the social experience of suffering. It can do this by becoming part of the apparatus of cultural representation that creates societal norms, which in turn shapes the social role and social behavior of the ill, and what should be the practices of families and health-care providers. The American cultural rhetoric, for example, is changing from the language of caring to the language of efficiency and cost; it is not surprising to hear patients themselves use this rhetoric to describe their problems. Thereby, the illness experience, for some,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

may be transformed from a consequential moral experience into a merely technical inexpediency.

This slow transmutation of experience is what Czeslaw Milosz, himself a refugee from political violence, presses us to come to grips with in taken-for-granted cultural processes of representation in the popular culture that infiltrate the ordinary practices of living:

> Almost every day, Public Television airs nature programs mainly for young people. About spiders, fish, lizards, coyotes, animals of the desert or of alpine meadows, and so on. The technical excellence of the photography doesn't prevent me from considering these programs obscene. Because what they show offends our human, moral understanding—not only offends it, but subverts it, for the thesis of these programs is: You see, that's how it is Nature; therefore, it is natural; and we, too, are a part of Nature, we belong to the evolutionary chain, and we have to accept the world as it is. If I turn off the television, horrified, disgusted by the images of mutual indifferent devouring. . .is it because I am capable of picturing what this looks like when translated into the life of human society? But the children, those millions of young minds, are they able to watch this with impunity since they don't associate anything with the blind cruelty of Nature? Or, without realizing it, are they being slowly and systematically poisoned by those masters of photography who also do not know what they are doing?[29]

DALYs and other economic indexes of health conditions have their appropriate uses, of course. We need to formulate health and social policy with respect to priorities for limited resources. We need valid economic indexes of illnesses and their social consequences. DALYs can be useful in health-care reform and public health planning. Yet, economic indexes should not become, as they seemed in much of the recent debate on health-care reform in the United States, the only authorized construction of suffering for policy and programs. These economic measures need to be complemented by narratives, ethnographies, and social histories that speak to the complex, even contradictory, human side of suffering. Absent this other side, the economistic measurement of suffering leaves out most of what is at stake for peoples globally.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ABSENT IMAGES: THE POLITICAL RHETORIC OF OPPRESSION

It is necessary to balance the account of the globalization of commercial and professional images with a vastly different and even more dangerous cultural process of appropriation: the totalitarian state's erasure of social experiences of suffering through the suppression of images. Here the possibility of moral appeal through images of human misery is prevented, and it is their absence that is the source of existential dismay.

Such is the case with the massive starvation in China from 1959 to 1961. This story was not reported at the time even though more than thirty million Chinese died in the aftermath of the ruinous policies of the Great Leap Forward, the perverse effect of Mao's impossible dream of forcing immediate industrialization on peasants. Accounts of this, the world's most devastating famine, were totally suppressed; no stories or pictures of the starving or the dead were published.

An internal report on the famine was made by an investigating team for the Central Committee of the Chinese Communist Party. It was based on a detailed survey of an extremely poor region of Anwei Province that was particularly brutally affected. The report includes this numbing statement by Wei Wu-ji, a local peasant leader from Anwei:

> Originally there were 5,000 people in our commune, now only 3,200 remain. When the Japanese invaded we did not lose this many: we at least could save ourselves by running away! This year there's no escape. We die shut up in our own houses. Of my 6 family members, 5 are already dead, and I am left to starve, and I'll not be able to stave off death for long.[30]

Wei Wu-ji continued:

> Wang Jia-feng from West Springs County reported that cases of eating human meat were discovered. Zhang Sheng-jiu said, "Only an evil man could do such a thing!" Wang Jia-feng said, "In 1960, there were 20 in our household, ten of them died last year. My son told his mother 'I'll die of hunger in a few days.'" And indeed he did.[31]

The report also includes a graphic image by Li Qin-ming, from Wudian County, Shanwang Brigade:

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> In 1959, we were prescheduled to deliver 58,000 jin of grain to the State, but only 35,000 jin were harvested, hence we only turned over 33,000 jin, which left 2,000 jin for the commune. We really have nothing to eat. The peasants eat hemp leaves, anything they can possibly eat. In my last report after I wrote, "We have nothing to eat," the Party told me they wanted to remove my name from the Party Roster. Out of a population of 280, 170 died. In our family of five, four of us have died leaving only myself. Should I say that I'm not broken hearted?[32]

Chen Zhang-yu, from Guanyu County, offered the investigators this terrible image:

> Last spring the phenomenon of cannibalism appeared. Since Comrade Chao Wu-chu could not come up with any good ways of prohibiting it, he put out the order to secretly imprison those who seemed to be at death's door to combat the rumors. He secretly imprisoned 63 people from the entire country. Thirty-three died in prison.[33]

The official report is thorough and detailed. It is classified *neibu,* restricted use only. To distribute it is to reveal state secrets. Presented publicly it would have been, especially if it had been published in the 1960s, a fundamental critique of the Great Leap, and a moral and political delegitimation of the Chinese Communist Party's claim to have improved the life of poor peasants. Even today the authorities regard it as dangerous. The official silence is another form of appropriation. It prevents public witnessing. It forges a secret history, an act of political resistance through keeping alive the memory of things denied.[34] The totalitarian state rules by collective forgetting, by denying the collective experience of suffering, and thus creates a culture of terror.

The absent image is also a form of political appropriation; public silence is perhaps more terrifying than being overwhelmed by public images of atrocity. Taken together the two modes of appropriation delimit the extremes in this cultural process.[35]

CODA

Our critique of appropriations of suffering that do harm does not mean that no appropriations are valid. To conclude that would be

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

to undermine any attempt to respond to human misery. It would be much more destructive than the problem we have identified; it would paralyze social action. We must draw upon the images of human suffering in order to identify human needs and to craft humane responses.

Yet, to do so, to develop valid appropriations, we must first make sure that the biases of commercial emphasis on profit-making, the partisan agendas of political ideologies, and the narrow technical interests that serve primarily professional groups are understood and their influence controlled. The first action, then, is critical self-reflection on the purposes of policies and the effects of programs. We take that to be a core component of programs of ethics in the professions. Perhaps a more difficult action is to lift the veil on the taken-for-granted cultural processes within which those policies and programs, no matter how well intended, are inevitably, and usually unintentionally, taken up and exploited. The idea that the first impulse of social and health-policy experts should be to historicize the issue before them and to critique the cultural mechanisms of action at hand goes against the grain of current practice. Nonetheless, that is a chief implication of our analysis. The starting point of policymakers and program builders needs to be the understanding that they can (and often unwillingly do) do harm. Because that potential for harm lies latent in the institutional structures that have been authorized to respond to human problems, that work behind even the best intentioned professionals, "experts" must be held responsible to define how those latent institutional effects can be controlled.

Humanizing the level at which interventions are organized means focusing planning and evaluation on the interpersonal space of suffering, the local, ethnographic context of action. This requires not only engagement with what is at stake for participants in those local worlds, but bringing those local participants (not merely national experts) into the process of developing and assessing programs. Such policy-making from the ground up can only succeed, however, if these local worlds are more effectively projected into national and international discourses on human problems. (This may represent the necessary complement to the globalization of local images. Perhaps it should be called the global representation of local contexts.) To do so requires a reformulation of the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

indexes and instruments of policy. Those analytic tools need to authorize deeper depictions of the local (including how the global—e.g., displacement, markets, technology—enters into the local). And those methodologies of policy must engage the existential side of social life. How to reframe the language of policies and programs so that large-scale social forces are made to relate to biography and local history will require interdisciplinary engagements that bring alternative perspectives from the humanities, the social sciences, and the health sciences to bear on human problems. The goal is to reconstruct the object of inquiry and the purposes of practice.

Ultimately, we will have to engage the more ominous aspects of globalization, such as the commercialization of suffering, the commodification of experiences of atrocity and abuse, and the pornographic uses of degradation.[36] Violence in the media, and its relation to violence in the streets and in homes, is already a subject that has attracted serious attention from communities and from scholars.[37] Regarding the even more fundamental cultural question of how social experience is being transformed in untoward ways, the first issue would seem to be to develop historical, ethnographic, and narrative studies that provide a more powerful understanding of the cultural processes through which the global regime of disordered capitalism alters the connections between collective experience and subjectivity, so that moral sensibility, for example, diminishes or becomes something frighteningly different: promiscuous, gratuitous, unhinged from responsibility and action.[38] There is a terrible legacy here that needs to be contemplated. The transformation of epochs is as much about changes in social experience as shifts in social structures and cultural representations; indeed, the three sites of social transformation are inseparable. Out of their triangulation, subjectivity too transmutes. The current transformation is no different; yet perhaps we see more clearly the hazards of the historical turn that we are now undertaking. Perhaps all along we have been wrong to consider existential conditions as an ultimate constraint limiting the moral dangers of civilizational change.

> At the end of this century it has for the first time become possible to see what a world may be like in which the past, including the past

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the present, has lost its role, in which the old maps and charts which guided human beings, singly and collectively, through life no longer represent the landscape through which we move, the sea on which we sail. In which we do not know where our journey is taking us, or even ought to take us.[39]

ENDNOTES

[1]This essay is drawn from a larger project concerning the social experience of suffering. Readers may wish to read Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman, "Suffering and its Professional Transformation," *Culture, Medicine and Psychiatry* 15 (3) (1991): 275–301; Arthur Kleinman, "Pain and Resistance," in Mary-Jo DelVecchio Good et al., eds., *Pain as Human Experience: Anthropological Perspectives* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1991), 169–97; Arthur Kleinman et al., "The Social Course of Epilepsy in China," *Social Science and Medicine* 40 (10) (1995): 1319–330; Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman, "How Bodies Remember: Social Memory and Bodily Experience of Criticism, Resistance, and Delegitimation following China's Cultural Revolution," *New Literary History* 25 (1994): 707–23; and Arthur Kleinman, *Writing at the Margin: Discourse Between Anthropology and Medicine* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1995).

[2]Luc Boltanski, *La Souffrance a Distance* (Paris: Metailie, 1993).

[3]On the heterogeneity of meanings and modes of suffering, see, for example, John Bowker, *Problems of Suffering in Religions of the World* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1970); Veena Das, "Moral Orientations to Suffering," in L. C. Chen, N. Ware, and A. Kleinman, eds., *Health and Social Change* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1994), 139–67; Arthur Kleinman, *The Illness Narratives: Suffering, Healing and Human Experience* (New York: Basic Books, 1988); Arthur Kleinman and Byron Good, eds., *Culture and Depression: Studies in the Anthropology and Cross-Cultural Psychiatry of Affect and Disorder* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1985); Paul Farmer, *AIDS and Accusation: The Geography of Blame in Haiti* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1992); T. N. Madan, "Living and Dying," in T. N. Madan, ed., *Non-renunciation Themes and Interpretations of Hindu Culture* (New Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1987), 118–41; Phillipe Ariès, *The Hour of Our Death,* trans. Helen Wever (New York: Knopf, 1981); Piero Camporesi, *Bread of Dreams: Food and Fantasy in Early Modern Europe,* trans. David Gentilcore (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1989); Carlos Ginzburg, *The Cheese and the Worms: The Cosmos of a Sixteenth-Century Miller,* trans. John and Anne Tedeschi (New York: Penguin Books, 1980); Ivan Morris, *The Nobility of Failure: Tragic Heroes in the History of Japan* (New York: New American Library, 1976); and Ann F. Thurston, *Enemies of the People: The Ordeals of the Intellectuals in China's Great Cultural Revolution* (New York: Knopf, 1987).

[4]See DelVecchio Good et al., eds., *Pain as Human Experience: Anthropological Perspectives*; David Morris, *The Culture of Pain* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

California Press, 1991); and Elaine Scarry, *The Body in Pain* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985).

[5]Lawrence Langer, *Holocaust Testimonies: The Ruins of Memory* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1993); Nancy Sheper-Hughes, *Death Without Weeping: The Violence of Everyday Life in Brazil* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1993); and Pierre Bourdieu, ed., *La Misere du Monde* (Paris: Editions du Seuil, 1993).

[6]Kleinman and Kleinman, "Suffering and its Professional Transformations."

[7]*The New York Times,* 26 March 1993, A3.

[8]Jean Dreze and Amartya Sen, *Hunger and Public Action* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1991), show that famines in sub-Saharan Africa occur as a result of political disorder, not crop failure per se.

[9]Bill Keller, "Kevin Carter, a Pulitzer Winner for Sudan Photo, is Dead at 33," *The New York Times,* 29 July 1994, 138; Scott Mac Leod, "The Life and Death of Kevin Carter," *Time,* 12 September 1994, 70–73.

[10]*Time,* 12 September 1994, 72.

[11]Ibid., 73.

[12]Ibid.

[13]Ibid.

[14]Ibid.

[15]For this view of the "taking" of victimized social subjects by the more powerful photographer, "a privileged observer"—the "eyes of power" idea—see W. J. T. Mitchell, *Picture Theory* (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1994), 288, 324, 365, 420–21. Mitchell also introduces the fundamental moral issue of the relationship between representation and responsibility. See Ibid., 421–25.

[16]On the dilemmas for cultural analysis of globalization, see Ulf Hannerz, "Mediations in the Global Ecumene," in Gisli Palsson, ed., *Beyond Boundaries: Understanding Translation and Anthropological Discourse* (Providence: BERG, 1993), 41–57; and Ulf Hannerz, "When Culture is Everywhere: Reflections on a Favorite Concept," *Ethnos* 58 (1993): 95–111.

[17]Stanley Cavell writes that philosophical knowledge is ultimately disappointing because it is incapable of decisively sorting out such "ordinary" human complexities. Stanley Cavell, *In Quest of the Ordinary* (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1988), 88, 147, 149; he goes on to assert, in Stanley Cavell, *A Pitch of Philosophy* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1994), 116, "the world calls for words, an intuition that words are, I will say, world-bound, that the world, to be experienced, is to be answered, that this is what words are for."

[18]The analysis that follows in this section draws on materials, and contains several paragraphs, in Arthur Kleinman and Robert Desjarlais, "Violence, Culture and the Politics of Trauma," in Arthur Kleinman, *Writing at the Margin,* chap. 8; Robert Desjarlais and Arthur Kleinman, "Violence and Demoralization in the New World Disorder," *Anthropology Today* 10 (5) (1994): 9–12; and Arthur

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Kleinman and Robert Desjarlais, "Ni patients ni victimes: Pour une ethnographie de la violence politique," *ACTES De La Recherche en sciences sociales* (ISSN 0355–5322) 104 (1994): 56–63.

[19]Compare the cover picture of *The Economist* of 23 July 1994, which, in the midst of the Rwandan crisis, is of a frightened Rwandan child. The picture is entitled "Helpless."

[20]On the uses of personification of collective catastrophe in the Western tradition of cultural representation, see Alan Mintz, *Hurban: Response to Catastrophe in Hebrew Literature* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1984).

[21]See the chapter on global social change in Robert Desjarlais et al., *World Mental Health: Problems and Priorities in Low-Income Countries* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1995), for a discussion of how the World Bank and the International Monetary Fund's rigorously-applied program of economic restructuring has worsened the health of women in sub-Saharan Africa. This volume also shows how the end of the Cold War and other global, political, and economic changes have often worked either to worsen social and mental health problems or to constrain health and social policy responses to those problems.

[22]See Alex Webb and David C. Unger, "Taking Haiti," *The New York Times Magazine,* 23 October 1994, 50–53.

[23]Michael J. Shapiro, *The Politics of Representation: Writing Practices in Biography, Photography, and Policy Analysis* (Madison, Wis.: University of Wisconsin Press, 1988), xii.

[24]The following section draws on materials in Arthur Kleinman and Robert Desjarlais, "Violence, Culture and the Politics of Trauma."

[25]See Allan Young, *The Harmony of Illusion: An Ethnography of Traumatic Memory* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, forthcoming); and Allan Young, "Suffering and the Origins of Traumatic Memory," in this issue of *Dædalus*. Recent surveys of populations of people who have experienced political violence report that between 25 and 75 percent experience posttraumatic stress disorder. See the chapter on violence in Desjarlais et al., *World Mental Health: Problems and Priorities in Low-Income Countries.*

[26]Arthur Kleinman, "A Critique of Objectivity in International Health," in Chen, Ware, and Kleinman, eds., *Health and Social Change.*

[27]See World Bank, *World Development Report 1993: Investing in Health* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1993).

[28]See, for example, Sheila Rothman, *Living in the Shadow of Death: Tuberculosis and the Social Experience of Illness in America* (New York: Basic Books, 1994); and Morris, *The Culture of Pain.*

[29]Czeslaw Milosz, "The State of Nature: Notes from a Diary," *New York Review of Books,* 11 August 1994, 41.

[30]Central Committee, Chinese Communist Party, *Internal Report, Annals for Feng Yang County, 1961,* 188–91.

[31]Ibid.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[32]Ibid.

[33]Ibid.

[34]See James C. Scott, *Domination and the Arts of Resistance* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1992); and Rubie Watson, "Memory, History and Opposition Under State Socialism: An Introduction," in Rubie Watson, ed., *Memory, History and Opposition Under State Socialism* (Santa Fe, N.Mex.: School of American Research Press, 1994), 1–20.

[35]It is not only the totalitarian state that makes use of the weight of silence, of course. In the Gulf War, the US media often disregarded Iraqi casualties on the battlefield, and told the story largely from the American perspective, in spite of the fact that there were several dozen Western journalists in Baghdad.

[36]Ian Palmer, a British military psychiatrist in Rwanda, is reported in *The New York Times* to have said: "A fascination with death has created a voyeurism among Westerners here—the relief agencies, the United Nations and the journalists. . . ." *The New York Times,* 7 November 1994, A4. The *Times*' reporter continues: "Western visitors regularly tour massacre sites where bodies are rotting and still unburied. Visiting diplomats have driven for hours to see bodies washed up in the eddies of the Akagera River on the Tanzanian border." Ibid. This deepening voyeuristic sensibility may be another side of the cultural process we have identified.

[37]With relation to the Carter picture, see, for example, Richard Harwood, "Moral Motives," *The Washington Post,* 21 November 1994, A25, which offers a defense of the ethical motivation of journalists who report on violence and atrocities, yet still registers the complexity of the moral issue of cultural representation.

[38]That there are limits to the commercial uses to which images of suffering can be put is shown by the responses, in Germany especially, to Benetton's provocative advertising campaign in which pictures of bodies tattooed with "HIV-positive," a war cemetery, an oil-soaked bird, child labor in South America, and the bloody uniform of a Croatian soldier are used, in a strange paradox even by postmodern terms, to sell clothing. See Nathaniel Nash, "Benetton Touches a Raw Nerve," *The New York Times,* 2 February 1995, D1, 18.

[39]Eric Hobsbawm, *The Age of Extremes: A History of the World, 1914–1991* (New York: Pantheon, 1994), 16.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

What difference does it make—for theory, for research, for policy, and for societal ethics—to change the border between a social and a health problem. Now pulling the edge toward the social side, later on pushing it toward the medical margin—does that disclose a comparative advantage for "medicalization" of human misery under certain conditions, or for "socialization" under others? The moral, the political, and the medical are culturally interrelated, but how do we best interpret that relationship and its implications?

Arthur Kleinman

From *Writing at the Margin: Discourse Between Anthropology and Medicine*

Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1995

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

David B. Morris

About Suffering: Voice, Genre, and Moral Community

"About suffering, they were never wrong,
The Old Masters: how well they understood
Its human position. . . ."

—W. H. Auden
"Musée des Beaux Arts"

WHAT CAN THE STUDY OF LITERATURE tell us about suffering? It is, of course, an impossible question, a sinkhole, a yawning chasm that dissertation directors warn against. It is also a question that opens up special difficulties because debates in contemporary theory have forced us to ask hard questions about such basic issues as the nature of interpretation, the boundaries of literature, and the relations between texts and the world. Literature, for example, is now routinely described as an ideological category that did not exist before the Enlightenment—its status threatened by such postmodern upstarts as discourse, *écriture*, and grammatology.[1] A loose alliance of new academic disciplines has shown how once-canonical works of Western literary tradition relegate minority figures—i.e., women, blacks, and Asians—to, at best, marginal status. What literature has to tell us about suffering, in short, depends on basic decisions about what counts as literature and whose suffering matters.

The difficulties mount because current theory makes it often hard to say what literature has to tell us about *anything*. Some

David B. Morris is a writer.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

theorists hold that all texts are inherently undecidable or receive temporarily stable meaning only through their changing historical receptions by different interpretative communities. A move from theory to practice does not promise firmer ground. The individual texts to consider are numberless. "It is probably no exaggeration to say that the single most common subject of art," writes Walter Slatoff, "is some form of human suffering."[2] Practical critics in the analysis of specific texts often simply replicate contested theoretical assumptions. We can expect that Marxist critics will show how suffering is bound up with social class and with the means of production; psychoanalytic critics will show how it taps into mechanisms of desire; feminist critics will show how it follows the fault lines of gender. While recent literary debates have left us in no danger of oversimplifying a discussion of suffering, they may appear at times as merely a conflict among partisans of wholly incompatible ways of reading.[3]

A final difficulty—the presumed need to define suffering and to distinguish it from related or overlapping states such as grief and pain—would seem to constitute an impassable barricade. Yet, some impassable barriers can be safely sidestepped. Suffering is currently undergoing vigorous redefinition within the biomedical community in a process that still seems rather fluid.[4] Moreover, literature has long served as an arena for explorations into the unknown and the indefinite; accounts of suffering should therefore include whatever literature (or its postmodern successor) reveals. Sidestepping specialized or essentialist definitions, I prefer to invoke an exploratory spirit and a provisional vocabulary as a means of respecting both the diversity of materials on suffering and the urgent need for dialogue among disparate disciplines, which always tend to see things a bit differently.

VOICE AND SILENCE

Voice is a concept familiar both in grammar and in poetics. It is often said that writing well means finding one's own voice. T. S. Eliot, in his essay "The Three Voices of Poetry," argued that poetry demands an encounter with intricately layered nuances of human speech expressing tone, attitude, and character.[5] A less common but useful way to think about voice is to consider its

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

opposite: silence. Silence stands in opposition to every voice, weak or strong, ordinary or unique, prosaic or poetic. The basic opposition between voice and silence matters here because suffering, like pain, with which it so often intermingles, exists in part beyond language.

The silence of suffering has, oddly, turned into something of a modern cliché—despite the contrary evidence of an almost interminable discourse of complaint, lament, litigation, symptom-mongering, and public confession. The cliché may simply acknowledge the power that most people possess to tune out unwelcome news, but it also captures a complex and basic fact about suffering.[6] Suffering is voiceless in the metaphorical sense that silence becomes a sign of something ultimately unknowable. It implies an experience not just disturbing or repugnant but inaccessible to understanding. In this sense, suffering encompasses an irreducible nonverbal dimension that we cannot know—not at least in any normal mode of knowing—because it happens in a realm beyond language. The quality of such suffering remains as blank to thought as the void opened up by a scream.

Paradoxically, the scream might serve as a potent image for the metaphorical silence at the heart of suffering. A scream is not speech but the most intense possible negation of language: sound and terror approaching the limits of absolute muteness. Like the ceremonial wailing of grief, it seems to come from a region where words fail. A typical Hollywood scream, while it often shatters a preceding silence or calm, also deepens the silence it shatters, as if gesturing toward something radically inexpressible. Indeed, one function of literature is to give this deeper silence a voice. Literary works from *Philoctetes* to *Krapp's Last Tape* labor to make such silences "speak" by extending our awareness of an irreducible, nonverbal dimension of suffering that can never be put into words. The impossible project of giving "speech" to silence is important especially because it exposes how we simplify and betray suffering whenever we ignore its power to elude every linguistic and conceptual tool that humans can marshal to understand it.

Silences are not all identical, of course, but convey a wide range of significance, from the contemplative depth of a pregnant pause to outrage, disbelief, and stunned wonder. In addition to metaphorical links with an inexpressible or unknowable experience, the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

silence of suffering also points to very practical breakdowns of speech. Its silence, that is, reflects something not ultimately ungraspable but merely resistant to description. Suffering tends to make people inarticulate, and in this sense the voicelessness of suffering often resembles the quiet retreat of people who live with chronic pain, who discover that months or years of unremedied complaint finally exhaust care-givers and even family. Such patients withdraw into an uncommunicative isolation, constructed in response to an environment where effective help and concern have all but vanished.

The silence of the patient, however, differs significantly from the voicelessness of many who suffer in other ways. Patients at least possess a recognized status within the social world of medicine, a status that confers rights and obligations, connecting the sufferer with an entire health-care system and with its attendant, language-rich field of physicians, nurses, therapists, insurance agents, and attorneys. Many people who suffer the routine misery of famine, civil conflict, and industrialized poverty have almost no status beyond the role of victim. An occasional grim picture flashed across millions of television screens merely intensifies the silence: it is axiomatic that the victims do not speak.

A loss of voice, further, proves to be almost built-in to the interpersonal structure within which suffering usually occurs. That is, even when words prove at least partially adequate, even when speech occurs, communication fails. W. H. Auden observes in his famous poem "Musée des Beaux Arts" that suffering is inextricably embedded in a social world where nonsufferers always find their own lives more immediate and absorbing, like the torturer's horse scratching its rump against a tree.[7] The problem, as Auden poses it, is not that witnesses deliberately turn away from disaster, unable to bear it or refusing to assist, although in fact people often do turn away. While suffering regularly disturbs and threatens us, which helps to explain why many people recoil or resist the ethical claims it makes upon us, Auden does not represent an aversion to suffering as moral failure, a lapse, say, of charity or courage. He depicts aversion or detachment, rather, as the outcome of a structural position we cannot help but occupy.

Suffering, in Auden's almost structuralist view, is an event that we witness always and only once-removed, as if through a pane of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

thick glass. The ploughman never looks up; the expensive ship always sails on. Should an act of suffering fall unavoidably within our field of vision, Auden insists that we cannot escape our built-in estrangement; it might as well occur in silence. Not even the Old Masters, he implies, could somehow shatter the glass and place us in direct relation to another's suffering. Instead, their triumph—perhaps straining the limits of art—lies in forcing us to recognize and to contemplate our fated detachment.

We need not wholly accept Auden's view that the structure of suffering contains at its heart an absolute and insurmountable otherness. His view, however, provides a helpful corrective to the widespread modern pieties based, say, in the parable of the Good Samaritan. The Good Samaritan represents a belief that suffering is an occasion for religious acts of virtue and compassion. The great strength of the parable is to insist that right action can take place despite the incomprehensible silence and otherness at the heart of suffering. Still, the parable also depends for its impact on our awareness that acts of virtue and compassion are, unfortunately, rare, and it thus indirectly supports Auden's view that our normal "human position" in relation to suffering mandates a glasslike separation and detachment. If abruptly our role changes from witness to victim, forcing us to endure affliction firsthand, then our position in the structure will correspondingly change, and we pass at once into an unfamiliar dimension where others view *us* with detachment and incomprehension, as if through a thick glass.

The irreducible otherness of suffering that Auden evokes so well is what gives special resonance to the concept of voice. Voice matters precisely because suffering remains, to some degree, inaccessible. Voice is what gets silenced, repressed, preempted, denied, or at best translated into an alien dialect, much as clinicians translate a patient's pain into a series of units on a grid of audio-visual descriptors. Indeed, voice ranks among the most precious human endowments that suffering normally deprives us of, removing far more than a hope that others will understand or assist us. Silence and the loss of voice may eventually constitute or represent for some who suffer a complete shattering of the self.

Certainly literature attests, often in paradoxical ways, to the loss of voice in suffering. Samuel Beckett spent a lifetime creating minimalist texts in which, like the Cheshire cat, voice seems caught

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the process of imminent disappearance.[8] Either the human state in its seriocomic bleakness leaves almost nothing to say, as in *Waiting For Godot,* or stable personal identity crumbles toward anonymous incoherence, as in *Not I,* where a spotlight shines on a mouth-sized hole in the closed curtain through which a nameless voice utters its nonstop woe. Images of linguistic breakdown and futile interchange express Beckett's view that suffering is not a trial of faith or a noble burden—as in Christian tradition—but an almost meaningless charade in the cosmic theater of the absurd. Beckett's art is to represent this diminished, nullified state of being with such droll precision that it seems almost tolerable. "I can't go on. I'll go on."

Yet, literature also contains more potent employments of voice in the face of affliction. As if in resistance to the detachment and bleakness that Auden and Beckett describe, other writers explore ways to readjust the structure of suffering. That is, they seek out means of expression that might approximate or at least respect an experience ordinarily beyond language. Like silence, voice is really a plural concept. The diverse voices transmitted in literary texts, of course, are far from always wise or composed. As in the Book of Job or in the voluminous writing that responded to the unprecedented disaster of World War I, readers may confront halting and troubled voices, voices that are angry and confused, hurt, exhausted, foolish, or blasphemous.[9] The content of the utterance, while crucial to its writer or speaker, matters less in suggesting what literature can tell us about suffering than the sheer act of speech itself: affliction has at last broken through into language. We are finally in the presence of words that cross over from the other side of torment.

Literary voices indeed convey such an enormous diversity of views that—taken together—they might approach or approximate a kind of encyclopedia of suffering. No single voice is sufficient. Women's voices will convey a different experience of suffering than the voices of men; black voices speak differently than white voices; martyrs' voices will not match the voices of inquisitors; Protestant martyrs will differ from Catholic martyrs; medieval voices, steeped in beliefs that link suffering to sin and damnation, will differ from modern voices.[10] In *King Lear,* for example, the treacherous, self-serving Edmund attributes suffering both to the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

influence of malign gods and to brutal human appetites. Blind, foolish Gloucester blames his suffering on fortune, while pious Kent invokes the mystery of an all-seeing divine providence. Lear, in moods ranging from compassion to madness, offers still more variations on the question of what it is to suffer. And all in one play.

In addition to the encyclopedic diversity of voices that it contains, literature makes two other significant contributions to a knowledge of suffering. Writers can open up the interior or private life of a character in ways often difficult or impossible outside of texts, revealing a personal side of affliction that we rarely see. Moreover, they can infuse the voices of suffering with an unusual power to move emotion and compel attention. In both ways, writers create the occasion for an empathetic reader-response that might counteract the structural detachment observed by Auden. Literature, in short, holds a power to address, or even reverse, the inherent pressure within affliction toward isolation and silence.

"The use of language," Joyce Carol Oates noted when accepting the National Book Award in 1970, "is all we have to pit against death and silence."[11] Writers, of course, have much to say about the limitations and misuses of language. Half the characters in world literature seem engaged in telling lies to the other half, and Oates never guarantees that the opposite of silence is truth. Yet, in giving voice to affliction, however imperfectly, writers also struggle to alter and improve our difficult relation to suffering. William Faulkner, accepting the Nobel Prize, argued that literature holds a special duty to lift the human heart by reminding us of our capacity for "compassion and sacrifice and endurance." It is suffering that traditionally requires these powers, and literature may thus develop and sustain a resource desperately needed in times of trouble. As Faulkner said in the final sentence of his acceptance speech, invoking poetry as a figure for all great literature, "The poet's voice need not merely be the record of man, it can be one of the props, the pillars to help him endure and prevail."[12]

Although award ceremonies may call forth suspiciously high-minded statements, the belief that literature can oppose suffering has a long history. In the Middle Ages, literature was sometimes defended against its pious detractors as therapeutic and restorative, a necessary tonic for renewed spiritual struggle. Medieval

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

doctors openly prescribed laughter and comic tales as an effective medicine against plague.[13] Renaissance physicians continued to prescribe mirth as a therapy useful against the epidemic illness called melancholy, and thus the noted writer-editor Norman Cousins in 1976 was simply invoking an ancient tradition when he described how Marx Brothers' films and comic television reruns helped him recover from a debilitating illness.[14] Like tragedy, comedy seems to be an enduring response to the dehumanizing powers of pain and suffering.

Certainly, as Western medicine has grown increasingly dependent on high-tech machines and complex pharmacokinetics, the uses of an instrument as basic and inexpensive as the human voice seem greatly underestimated. Evidence from support groups and psychoanalysis strongly suggests that language, under the right conditions, can have healing powers. Words can demonstrably trigger a painkilling placebo effect. Yet, the vast biomedical library on pain contains only a few slim booklets in which patients speak in their own voices—free from appropriation via commentary or analysis.[15] The distinguished American novelist Reynolds Price recently lamented the absence of helpful voices when he suddenly faced a personal struggle against spinal cancer. "I needed to read some story that paralleled, at whatever distance, my unfolding bafflement," he writes, "—some honest report from a similar war, with a final list of hard facts learned and offered unvarnished—but. . .I never found it."[16] His own account, *A Whole New Life: An Illness and a Healing*, is a compelling example of how writers can help others by empowering and amplifying the individual human voice: soon after publication he was receiving some forty letters each week from people seeking his assistance. The need to hear a voice is rarely stronger than when a person endures suffering. Letters, diaries, and journals written by sufferers both famous and remote—from John Keats to unknown slaves or soldiers—attest to a value implicit in the act of writing. Many who today suffer silently and in confusion might be helped if we learned how to tap the resources of literature in restoring significance to an individual human voice.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

GENRE AND THE SHAPE OF SUFFERING

Voices are never simply the medium of individual speech. With the help of theorists from Wittgenstein and Austin to Foucault and Bakhtin, recent literary studies have argued that individual voices are always engaged in (often unnoticed) dialogue that links them to other speakers in the encompassing social network of language. Each voice speaks with a distinctive timbre, of course. Yet, no one can communicate in language without employing the innumerable speech acts—asking, telling, promising, begging, urging, praising—that typify the intricate cultural and linguistic codes underlying even the most simple utterance. Analysis of such ordinarily unnoticed codes makes it clear that we communicate by means of widely-shared social patterns that Bakhtin calls "speech genres."[17] Speech genres denote all the formal or informal—pure or mixed—codes that allow us to understand and to construct individual utterances, from legal briefs and government documents to jokes, postcards, papal bulls, football cheers, and letters of recommendation.

Jacques Derrida makes the crucial point when he writes that "there is no genreless text." "A text," he insists, "cannot belong to no genre, it cannot be without or less a genre."[18] Like texts, voices communicate only by means of genres that impose loose or strict demands on speakers. Speech genres depend, moreover, on the existence of specific discourse communities. A football cheer is meaningless in a culture without sport. An Islamic call to prayer makes no sense in a world devoid of Muslims. Yet, speech genres do more than assure that there is never simply a voice speaking. They help to shape the substance of what is said. For example, Ralph Cohen shows how a single narrative (about the murderous apprentice George Barnwell) undergoes crucial changes as it is retold in the differing genres of oral ballad, domestic tragedy, chapbook, and novel.[19]

Why does it matter that every voice is shaped and constrained by speech genres? How we talk about suffering and how we talk when suffering is always shaped and constrained by the speech genres of specific discourse communities. In a scholarly journal, discourse about suffering will normally take the form of twenty-five-page essays. There will be footnotes to contemporary think-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ers, correct grammar, titles with colons. Obscenities and profanities will be expunged. Readers may notice that the essays place an invisible premium on intelligence, employ difficult or specialized diction, avoid familiar ideas, and strive to appear original. Methodist hymns, by contrast, treat suffering within a speech genre where almost none of the assumptions about scholarly essays apply.

Subtly or overtly, then, genre molds facts and events to fit its contours, and a narrative of suffering will undergo subtle changes depending on whether it takes the form of a documentary film, a television miniseries, or a comic book. Even such deeply personal utterances as the testimony of Holocaust survivors will fall under the sway of generic patterns no doubt invisible to the speakers. Indeed, "survivor testimony" is now a distinctive modern subgenre, with informal conventions governing content, setting, camera angle, gesture, and displays of emotion. Scholars who ignore how speech genres shape any utterance or representation of suffering risk making the same error as visitors to a museum who see an African ritual mask—torn from its context of social life—hung up on the wall like Western artwork.

The shaping force of genre extends beyond form to meaning. In fact, audiences depend on generic patterns to provide a framework for interpretation. Such frames, for example, let us know whether we are reading a sacred scripture or a blasphemous parody: the words may be almost identical. An utterance that would seem incoherent within a tragedy may make perfect sense in a farce. The way we understand the meaning of any utterance, writes E. D. Hirsch, Jr. in his chapter on genre, is "like learning the rules of a game."[20] The rules may change and new games may appear. It is important to remember that genres are historical creations and, like tragedy, change over time. It is genre, however, in every age, that tells us what language-game we are playing.

The power of genre reaches even beyond meaning to influence the very possibility of speech. As in traditions of courtroom testimony, genre not only shapes content and sways understanding but it constrains what we are *permitted* to say. A fact so obvious may go without saying, but its implications are far-reaching. Specific literary genres often carry within them explicit or unspoken ideological values.[21] Suffering, thus, will be infused with specific values

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

depending on the speech genre in which it is communicated. Further, generic values do not somehow stop short at the (porous) borders of literature. Hayden White has mounted a strong argument that historians write history—and hence we know our own past—only within the conventions of literary genre.[22] It is highly relevant that two powerful literary genres—tragedy and the novel—have dominated Western discourse on suffering. The unavoidable question might be put this way: What values, constraints, or conditions do tragedy and the novel impose on our knowledge of suffering?

Tragedy indeed is the one genre so basic to Western thought on suffering that newspapers still call almost any large misfortune *tragic.* Behind this casual usage lies a tradition that stretches back to Aristotle. Two thousand years of theory and practice make any search for an unchanging essence of tragedy more than ordinarily futile. Northrop Frye observed that most theories of tragedy focus on a single great drama as the norm, much as Hegel's emphasis on the clash of opposing systems of value is keyed to the *Antigone.*[23] Aristotle's account, centered mostly on *Oedipus Tyrannus,* is no less partial than other theories, but its status as the origin of Western discourse on tragedy makes the *Poetics* an important test case for examining the influence of genre on our knowledge of suffering.

Suffering (*pathos*) is, for Aristotle, indispensable to tragedy. Drama without *pathos*, he writes, cannot be tragic. Unknown before the fifth century B.C., the term *pathos* indicated not just misery or misfortune but what classicist Thomas Gould calls "catastrophic suffering, undergone by some great figure, man or god, far in excess of the sufferer's deserts."[24] Aristotelian tragedy, in its implicit ideological assumptions, thus involves a view that not all suffering (and not everyone who suffers) is equal. In effect reproducing Greek assumptions about social worth, it holds at its core the values of aristocratic privilege, whereas ordinary suffering and ordinary people lie beyond its scope, pushed to the margins or personified in a passive, hapless chorus. These social values, in turn, are reflected in Aristotle's insistence that the tragic poet writes in an elevated style appropriate to powerful individuals and great acts. The catastrophe befalling a person of high rank likely involves the fate of whole families, armies, or cities so that Aristo-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

telian tragedy helps confirm our assumption that suffering is invariably serious. Yet, a belief that suffering is always serious—tragic—belongs to the history of Western thought. Other cultures do not uniformly share it.[25]

The novel—the second dominant genre that helps to shape Western knowledge of suffering—complicates but also reinforces the emphasis in tragic drama on individuality and seriousness. One complication lies in novelistic techniques for achieving the mixture of distinct styles, voices, and discourses that Bakhtin calls "heteroglossia."[26] Heteroglossia—the dynamic clash of differing dialects and diction—for Bakhtin is what distinguishes the novel from more homogeneous and elevated genres such as tragedy. Novels, in his view, extend heteroglossia beyond language to a mixture that encompasses action, character, social status, and belief systems such that no single voice can emerge from the text as delivering the authorized version. Where tragedy for Aristotle is implicitly aristocratic, the novel for Bakhtin implicitly subverts established hierarchies. Where Aristotle sees tragedy as always serious, Bakhtin views the novel as inherently comic, a prose carnival or marketplace, where laughter and a license to speak freely across traditional lines of authority call into question every solemn or single-minded view.

It is useful to examine further the ways in which Bakhtinian novels complicate the view of suffering implicit in Aristotelian tragedy. Just as novels mostly explore instances of suffering that are less than catastrophic, they extend the role of hero to figures whose low or middling birth would exclude them from classical tragedy. The comic spirit native to the novel tends to undermine tragic seriousness. In Beckett's work, for example, the novel may even embrace a sense that suffering is absurd—or absurdly comic. Further, the novel often vastly expands its focus on the social world; Zola, for example, forces us to recognize the suffering of whole masses of common people. There is, thus, good reason to think that tragedy and the novel offer quite different outlooks on human suffering. Yet, allowing for important differences, in two respects tragedy and the novel both reinforce an implicitly unified view of suffering: high value is placed on the individual, and both rely on the fascinations of plot.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Plot, for Aristotle, is the soul of tragedy. While he insists that tragedies must include *pathos,* suffering alone does not create tragedy. It is the action, or plot, that creates a structure within which the *pathos* makes sense. Plot, then, for Aristotle, is what imparts to suffering its tragic status. With some obvious and quirky exceptions, plot is likewise so central to the novel that many popular novelists seem little more than machines for its mass production. Novelistic suffering, whatever its forays into stream-of-consciousness or meditative stasis, fundamentally demands the construction of plot. Plot, we might say, is somehow crucial to the generic framework within which both novels and tragedies place human suffering.

What does suffering have to do with plot? Through their emphasis on plot, tragedy and the novel implicitly represent suffering not as a mere state of being—persisting like a viral infection almost independent of human agency—but rather as an event embedded within a matrix of related actions. Further, plots illuminate the ways in which individual events are connected. One reason why Aristotle values plot so highly is because it offers cognitive clarifications that make tragedy, in his words, more philosophical than history.[27] History, for Aristotle, provides a mere record of actual happenings, whereas tragedy employs its artfully constructed plot to show us not what is actual or merely possible but rather *probable.* It demonstrates, almost like a theorem in geometry, that suffering is an unavoidable outcome given a sequence of specific, connected actions.

In short, in tragedy and the novel, suffering is represented as more than a persistent theme in the human condition. It implies that suffering is less a condition—a state of being—than an event: an event within the context of a larger, surrounding plot. Despite the frequent invocation of fate by characters in Greek tragedies, suffering in tragedy and the novel loses its ancient aura of fatalism because it is never merely the experience of a debilitating passivity. Suffering is an action. It is the outcome of a series of preceding acts. Indeed, this plot-centered view holds the promise of cognitive clarifications that may lead to the possibility of personal and social change. Although the protagonist of a tragedy or novel may be inextricably trapped within a structure of action too intricate or complex to reverse, the reader or audience occupies a position in

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

which the detachment that Auden observed in "Musée des Beaux Arts" offers a crucial vantage point for securing knowledge and directing relief.

A plot-centered view of suffering certainly holds important consequences in the world outside literature. Gustavo Gutiérrez, Peruvian founder of liberation theology, views the suffering of the Lima slum-dwellers and of the impoverished masses in Latin America not as a changeless state of being rooted in original sin or in the human condition. He understands it instead as embedded in an extended and ongoing historical action: in this case, the political and economic oppression sponsored by an elite class (including leaders of the Church) who secured power through an appalling series of historical injustices.[28] Suffering in the slums of Lima, Gutiérrez implies, will be reversed not by medicines, compassion, or improved services, however welcome these might be, but only by material social change—action—that signifies the creation of a new and just historical plot.

SUFFERING AND MORAL COMMUNITY

The massive suffering in Latin America and elsewhere raises the question of how far we may perceive suffering as purely an individual matter. C. S. Lewis once claimed that, at any moment, there is never more pain in the universe than a single person experiences.[29] Pain, so the argument goes, exists only within an individual nervous system. I cannot feel your pain; you cannot feel mine; together we cannot feel the pain of a whole battlefield of casualties. This argument disregards the claim of non-Western spiritual traditions to transcend the isolated ego. It also completely misses the point. The Holocaust cannot accurately be described as the suffering of a single Jew repeated six million times. The fact remains that the suffering of groups or entire populations is an experience that most people, writers included, find extremely difficult to grasp.

Literature, in its reliance on individual characters, reflects and augments our difficulties in grasping the affliction of large groups of people.[30] Such reliance is historical and cultural in the sense that writers—always situated within a specific social landscape—necessarily work with the materials of a bounded world. It is hardly

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

surprising that the emphasis on individual suffering reinforced through tragedy and the novel is saturated with the distinctive values of Western culture. Despite its deeper roots in Dionysian mysteries or fertility cults, tragedy takes its social origin in the aristocratic, slave-owning, heroic culture of ancient Greece, while the novel famously emerges during the early modern era when European feudal hierarchies began to crumble under the new pressure of bourgeois individualism. There are sound reasons why tragedy and the novel would reinforce an implicit belief that suffering, whatever its wider resonance, is ultimately an individual matter.

Certainly tragedy and the novel, however much preoccupied with metaphysics or the social world, tend to focus on the crisis of a single hero or heroine: *Oedipus Rex, Macbeth, King Lear, Robinson Crusoe, Tom Jones, Hedda Gabler.* Although some writers subordinate character to theme, setting, or sheer linguistic exuberance, even in novels that describe immense casts and huge catastrophes—such as *War and Peace*—the affliction of entire groups appears mostly as a vague background against which we view in sharp detail the lives of a few main characters. Despite the famous panoramic shot of Civil War casualties in David O. Selznick's film *Gone With the Wind,* it is Rhett and Scarlett who occupy the center of attention. We see but in another sense do not see—do not truly experience—the suffering of multitudes.

The affliction of large groups is often not just difficult to see but impossible to find. The text simply cannot recognize the suffering of groups whose misery it represses, as in the common run of cowboy films or colonial novels.[31] This ideological blindness to suffering operates on a principle very different from the structure of detachment that Auden identified. Auden traces our detachment to a normal human self-absorption and inability to share the consciousness of a fellow creature. An ideological blindness to suffering, by contrast, depends largely on the operation of what philosopher Tom Regan has termed "moral communities."

Moral communities differ immensely in their beliefs, values, and cohesiveness but they always share a dependence on exclusion. In *The Thee Generation: Reflections on the Coming Revolution,* Regan proposes this geometrical analogy:

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> Suppose we imagine the moral community circumscribed by a circle. Individuals inside the circle are members of the moral community, individuals outside the circle are not. Those inside the circle, by virtue of their membership in the moral community, are entitled to a kind of consideration denied those outside. Of the former, but not the latter, we may say, "They are morally considerable."[32]

The boundaries of a moral community, of course, are flexible and often paradoxical. Animals, for example, are excluded from most Western moral communities, although Americans regularly make an exception for household pets and for a few charismatic species, like whales or dolphins. Certain criminals are excluded—mass murderers, for example, and serial rapists—but not bank robbers, stock manipulators, or repentant evangelists. Wartime propaganda shows how easy and convenient it is to exclude the enemy from a nation's moral community, just as earlier ages (without the pretext of war) found it possible to exclude the insane, the poor, women, blacks, and children.

Suffering, in short, is not a raw datum, a natural phenomenon we can identify and measure, but a social status that we extend or withhold. We extend or withhold it depending largely on whether the sufferer falls within our moral community. An Iraqi truck driver in the Persian Gulf War can die in a firestorm of laser-guided missiles, and the incident will play on American television as proof of superior United States technology. (Iraqi soldiers, in turn, seemed to find Kuwaiti civilians readily disposable.) We do not acknowledge the destruction of beings outside our moral community as suffering; we detach ourselves from their pain as if it were an incomprehensible behavior encountered on some Swiftian island. Within a moral community, we employ names like *martyr* or *hero* and inscribe the suffering of our own people within narratives of hallowed sacrifice and epic achievement. Literature clearly plays a significant role in orchestrating the language that validates or invalidates certain experiences as suffering.

Literary inclusions and exclusions usually reflect dominant values of the community within which a text is written, but one important function of literature is to challenge and stretch—even to transgress—the boundaries of a moral community. The *Aeneid,* for example, while aspiring to the stance of national epic, places the Roman conquest of Italy in a tragic light that exposes the deep

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

losses required by imperial success.[33] Virgilian pathos at the "tears of things" seeks to extend the borders of the Roman moral community to encompass even the death of an enemy and the loss of a former world. The implicit reader posited by the *Aeneid* cannot overlook or glorify the suffering imposed by national destiny. By their special skill in moving emotions and altering perceptions, writers can help create—as well as uncreate—suffering. That is, they can expand the borders of the moral community and force us to acknowledge suffering where we normally do not see it.

Charles Dickens and Harriet Beecher Stowe provide especially clear examples of this power to reinvent suffering. In adapting the earlier sentimental novel, they extend a Romantic concern for outcasts and marginal figures—slaves, chimney sweeps, orphans, and an almost forgotten subculture of the poor—into a focused social protest against the evils of slavery and industrialism. Their vivid characters, interconnected plots, and empathetic styles uncover suffering where it was earlier thought not to exist. In fact, Stowe in *Uncle Tom's Cabin; or, Life Among the Lowly*—the first American novel to sell over a million copies—so strongly engaged popular feeling that she has been cited among the causes of the Civil War. Contemporary readers not only wept at the ordeals of fictional slaves but, far more important, came to acknowledge the ordeals *as* suffering and felt moved enough to rearrange the existing social order that had denied it.

The power to reinvent suffering by extending or contracting the borders of a moral community can, like other powers, be used with differing degrees of blindness or insight. Neither Dickens nor Stowe could address the link between domestic injustice and colonial empire. The Marquis de Sade wrote vast pornographic novels that almost gleefully contract their moral community to a circle of pain-crazed aristocratic libertines, for whom suffering is transformed into a source of pleasure. On the other hand, a modern admirer of Sade, Michel Foucault, in 1971 helped found the "Prison Information Group"—a coalition that gave voice to a silent and powerless minority by publishing the firsthand accounts of prisoners who described conditions within the French penal system.[34] Few writers are more important than Foucault in exposing how, paradoxically, modern affliction is promoted by the same institutions—prisons, clinics, madhouses—that the state establishes in

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

order to prevent suffering. It is a paradox that still remains potent in such ubiquitous modern institutions as disability insurance and welfare payments, which may often do as much harm as good.[35]

The point is not to celebrate or condemn specific writers but to recognize how writing helps to create and to uncreate suffering. Moral community, genre, and voice are concepts that can help us think about suffering both within and beyond literature. They certainly raise questions that need to be pursued. To what extent is all suffering alike, or to what extent is it inescapably heterogeneous? How far can writers exploit techniques of detachment (as in the drama of Brecht) to permit a revaluation of suffering perhaps impossible through techniques of empathy? A response to such questions should indicate that writers do far more than describe or represent affliction: they can also, on occasion, reinvent suffering and, in the process, help to mobilize the will, passion, and intelligence needed to change the world.

Yet, we must be careful not to claim too much. Perhaps the most important thing that literature has to tell us about suffering concerns the need for respect in the face of an experience that always holds back part of its truth, inaccessible and alien. In London in 1972 a small company of Zulus from South Africa put on a performance of *Macbeth*. The fur-clad, spear-thrusting Zulu warriors devoted much of the performance to tribal dances; they paid no attention to the hero's inner drama. "O, full of scorpions is my mind, dear wife!" cries Macbeth in his torment after the murder of King Duncan (III.ii). The Zulus conveyed none of this. Instead, ignoring the psychology of individual distress, what they conveyed superbly through drumbeat and ritual dance was the unthinkable disaster that enfolds a small community when someone murders the king. The dances expressed the suffering of a close-knit group—not separate individuals but a moral community—and they also seemed to be a means of dealing with the disorder Macbeth had unleashed, much like formal prayers in times of grief. Efforts to help people in affliction cannot succeed if we fail to respect how different cultures construct distinctive social practices of suffering and how these practices may envision unique remedies or responses.[36] Here too, if we heed the Zulu dancers, literature has much to tell us about the possibilities for knowledge and action.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ENDNOTES

[1]Terry Eagleton, *Literary Theory: An Introduction* (Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1983).

[2]Walter J. Slatoff, *The Look of Distance: Reflections on Suffering and Sympathy in Modern Literature—Auden to Agee, Whitman to Woolf* (Columbus, Ohio: Ohio State University Press, 1985), 233.

[3]See *Falling into Theory: Conflicting Views on Reading Literature,* ed. David H. Richter (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1994).

[4]For biomedical definitions, see *The Hidden Dimension of Illness: Human Suffering,* ed. Patricia L. Starck and John P. McGovern (New York: National League for Nursing Press, 1992); and C. Richard Chapman and Jonathan Gavrin, "Suffering and its Relationship to Pain," *Journal of Palliative Care* 9 (2) (1993): 5–13.

[5]T. S. Eliot, "The Three Voices of Poetry" (1953), in *On Poetry and Poets* (New York: Farrar, Straus and Cudahy, 1957).

[6]On silence, see Elaine Scarry, *The Body in Pain: The Making and Unmaking of the World* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1985), 42–45. Voice and representation are discussed in *Pain as Human Experience: An Anthropological Perspective,* ed. Mary-Jo DelVecchio Good et al. (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1992).

[7]On suffering, see Thomas Dilworth, "Auden's 'Musée des Beaux Arts,'" *Explicator* 49 (3) (Spring 1991): 181–83.

[8]On suffering, see Cho-hee Joh, "Beckett's Capacity for Differentiation: Some Observations on Reading His Works," *Journal of English Language and Literature* 35 (4) (Winter 1989): 759–73.

[9]See Gustavo Gutiérrez, *On Job: God-Talk and the Suffering of the Innocent* (1985), trans. Matthew J. O'Connell (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, 1987); and Paul Fussell, *The Great War and Modern Memory* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1975).

[10]See Susan Sipple, "'Witness [to] the Suffering of Women': Poverty and Sexual Transgression in Meridel Le Sueur's *Women on the Breadlines,*" in *Feminism, Bakhtin, and the Dialogic,* ed. Dale M. Bauer and Susan Jaret McKinstry (Albany, N.Y.: SUNY Press, 1991): 135–53; John Knott, *Discourses of Martyrdom in English Literature, 1563–1694* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1994); and Katherine Heinrichs, "Love and Hell: The Denizens of Hades in the Love Poems of the Middle Ages," *Neophilologus* 73 (4) (October 1989): 593–604.

[11]Joyce Carol Oates, "Remarks. . .accepting the National Book Award in Fiction" (1970), in Mary Kathryn Grant, *The Tragic Vision of Joyce Carol Oates* (Durham, N.C.: Duke University Press, 1978), 164.

[12]William Faulkner, "Address upon Receiving the Nobel Prize for Literature" (1950), in *Essays, Speeches, and Public Letters,* ed. James B. Meriwether (New York: Random House, 1965), 120.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[13]Glending Olson, *Literature as Recreation in the Later Middle Ages* (Ithaca, N.Y.: Cornell University Press, 1982).

[14]Norman Cousins's *JAMA* essay was expanded into his best-selling book, *Anatomy of an Illness as Perceived by the Patient: Reflections on Healing and Regeneration* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1979). On comedy, see David B. Morris, *The Culture of Pain* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1991).

[15]See *People With Pain Speak Out,* ed. Christine Nyhane and Brian Sardeson (Ballarat East, Australia: The Writing Project Group, 1990); and *Living With Chronic Pain: Personal Experiences of Pain Sufferers,* ed. Laura S. Hitchcock (Bethesda, Md.: National Chronic Pain Outreach Association, 1992). Various newsletters and support groups, such as the American Chronic Pain Association, also seek to give voice to the experience of patients.

[16]Reynolds Price, *A Whole New Life: An Illness and a Healing* (New York: Atheneum, 1994), 181.

[17]M. M. Bakhtin, *Speech Genres and Other Late Essays,* ed. Caryl Emerson and Michael Holquist, trans. Vern W. McGee (Austin, Tex.: University of Texas Press, 1986).

[18]Jacques Derrida, "The Law of Genre," *Critical Inquiry* 7 (1) (Autumn 1980): 65. Derrida offers this view as a "hypothesis."

[19]On genre and narrative change, see Ralph Cohen, "History and Genre," *New Literary History* 17 (2) (Winter 1986): 203–18.

[20]E. D. Hirsch, Jr., *Validity in Interpretation* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1967), 70.

[21]See Thomas O. Beebee, *The Ideology of Genre: A Comparative Study of Generic Instability* (University Park, Pa.: Pennsylvania State University Press, 1994).

[22]Hayden White, *Metahistory: The Historical Imagination in Nineteenth-Century Europe* (Baltimore, Md.: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1974).

[23]Northrop Frye, *Anatomy of Criticism* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1957), 212.

[24]Thomas Gould, *The Ancient Quarrel Between Poetry and Philosophy* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1990), ix.

[25]For a non-Western view, see Gananath Obeyesekere, "Depression, Buddhism, and the Work of Culture in Sri Lanka," *Culture and Depression: Studies in the Anthropology and Cross-Cultural Psychiatry of Affect and Disorder,* ed. Arthur Kleinman and Byron Good (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1985), 134–52.

[26]M. M. Bakhtin, *The Dialogic Imagination: Four Essays by M. M. Bakhtin,* ed. Michael Holquist, trans. Caryl Emerson and Michael Holquist (Austin, Tex.: University of Texas Press, 1981); and Tzvetan Todorov, *Mikhail Bakhtin: The Dialogical Principle* (1981), trans. Wlad Godzich (Minneapolis, Minn.: University of Minnesota Press, 1984).

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[27]"Clarification" is one definition of the Aristotelian term *catharsis*. See *Aristotle's Poetics: A Translation and Commentary for Students of Literature,* trans. Leon Golden, commentary by O. B. Hardison, Jr. (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1968).

[28]Gustavo Gutiérrez, *A Theology of Liberation: History, Politics and Salvation* (1971), trans. Caridad Inda and John Eagleson (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, 1973).

[29]C. S. Lewis, *The Problem of Pain* (New York: Macmillan, 1944), 103–104.

[30]Marxist theorist Georg Lukács sees novelistic characters as infused with thoughts and emotions "typical" of large groups, yet even this access to large groups remains *through* individuals. Georg Lukács, "The Intellectual Physiognomy of Literary Characters" (trans. 1936), in *Radical Perspectives in the Arts,* ed. Lee Baxandall (Baltimore, Md.: Penguin Books, 1972), 89–141.

[31]See Terry Eagleton, *Criticism and Ideology: A Study in Marxist Literary Theory* (London: NLB, 1976); and Terry Eagleton, Fredric Jameson, and Edward Said, *Nationalism, Colonialism, and Literature* (Minneapolis, Minn.: University of Minnesota Press, 1990). On ideological blind spots in texts, see Pierre Macherey, *A Theory of Literary Production* (1966), trans. Geoffrey Wall (London: Routledge & Kegan Paul, 1978).

[32]Tom Regan, *The Thee Generation: Reflections on the Coming Revolution* (Philadelphia, Pa.: Temple University Press, 1991), 20.

[33]See Michael C. J. Putnam, *The Poetry of the Aeneid: Four Studies in Imaginative Unity and Design* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1965).

[34]James Miller, *The Passion of Michel Foucault* (New York: Doubleday, 1993), 64–65, 187–93.

[35]On disability, see Wilbert E. Fordyce, "Pain and Suffering: A Reappraisal," *American Psychologist* 43 (4) (April 1988): 276–83; and Mark D. Sullivan and John D. Loeser, "The Diagnosis of Disability: Treating and Rating Disability in a Pain Clinic," *Archives of Internal Medicine* 152 (September 1992): 1829–1835.

[36]See Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman, "Suffering and its Professional Transformation: Toward an Ethnography of Interpersonal Experience," *Culture, Medicine and Psychiatry* 15 (3) (1991): 275–301.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

To talk of suffering is to talk not of an academic problem but of the sheer bloody agonies of existence, of which all men are aware and most have direct experience. All religions take account of this; some, indeed, make it the basis of all they have to say. Whatever theoretical constructions may be built, the foundations are laid in the apparent realities of what it is like to be alive. Thus, what a religion has to say about suffering reveals, in many ways more than anything else, what it believes the nature and purpose of existence to be.

John Bowker

From *Problems of Suffering in Religions of the World*

Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1970
Reprinted by permission of Cambridge University Press.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Lawrence L. Langer

The Alarmed Vision: Social Suffering and Holocaust Atrocity

UNTIL WE FIND A WAY OF TOPPLING THE BARRIER that sequesters mass suffering in other regions of the world from the comfort and safety we enjoy far from its ravages, little will be done to rouse the attention of our political or professional leaders, to say nothing of our own. Domestic calm encourages distancing from foreign pain. Past episodes of catastrophe have taught us how difficult it is for the distress of others to disrupt the tranquil rhythms of our daily lives. We may be horror-struck by the chaos that starvation and civil strife inflict on victims in foreign places like Somalia or Sarajevo, but to be horror-struck is a frugal form of charity. We need a new kind of discourse to disturb our collective consciousness and stir it into practical action that moves beyond mere pity.

We will get nowhere with this problem until we admit that the familiar verbal modes for approaching it have been exhausted by centuries of repetition. Even a word like "suffering" does little to help us imagine the modern disasters we are challenged to confront. In fact, by calling the murder of European Jewry an example of mass suffering, we risk limiting its scope by merging it with prior models that are meager measures of the event. Job endured loss, but gained divine acknowledgment and a limited spiritual insight after refusing to let physical trial curtail his moral strength. Nothing could be further from the ordeal of the Holocaust victim than this prototype of unprovoked suffering, which is deemed redemptive only by those who misread Job's protest. The Gospel

Lawrence L. Langer is Professor of English Emeritus at Simmons College in Boston, Massachusetts.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

accounts of the passion of Jesus are equally useless in aiding us to visualize the dilemma of the Holocaust. So too are the fictional visions of Tolstoy and Dostoyevsky that draw so heavily on those narratives. The notions of moral rebellion, punishment, and salvation that energize such Old and New Testament texts do not lead us to the outskirts of Auschwitz or Treblinka, nor indeed to the atrocities in Bosnia-Herzegovina. They steer us instead into friendly harbors, where neither conscience nor imagination is in any danger of running aground.

Holocaust literature is a major goad that urges us to reimagine atrocity and to rewrite the text of suffering in contemporary terms. The following poem, "Written in Pencil in the Sealed Boxcar," by Israeli writer Dan Pagis is a classic example of such artistic provocation:

> Here in this transport
> I am Eve
> With Abel my son
> If you should see my older son
> Cain son of man [or Adam]
> Tell him that I[1]

The journey from the Garden of Eden to the gas chambers of Auschwitz bears no scriptural authority, but since death camps need no biblical model to confirm their existence, it is scripture, not history, according to Pagis, that must alter its text. A Siamese bond now twins creation with destruction in a way that sabotages the narrative of Cain's primal crime and replaces it with a story of mass murder. This, in turn, imposes new burdens on our very notion of scripture and its role in the unfolding human saga.

But the poem does much more. Since Genesis is a completed tale, the reader is coaxed to demolish its frame and, through a kind of imaginative osmosis, to inject into its ancient nucleus a new vision more consistent with results it could not have foreseen. Who could have predicted for Eve and her issue the voyage that would turn Abel into a different kind of victim and fraternal violence into a vast catastrophe? The loss of a single son was the start of the Jewish narrative; the murder of an entire people was the beginning of something else, though we are left uncertain of what because Eve's unspoken message is buried in the challenge of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

her arrested voice. Whatever its content might have been, it would have included a summons to the alarmed vision, a call to Cain (and the rest of us) to rethink his assigned role and, through a retroactive gesture of spiritual insight, somehow to merge the dreadful end that awaits his mother and his brother with one of the archetypal chronicles of Jewish destiny.[2] A poem can no longer balance through its achieved form the void of discord that recent history seems to offer us. Deprived of this common solace from art, we are invited by Pagis to join in the perilous ritual of closure without any pledge that our search for meaning will uncover new comforts to blunt our grief.

The shift from fratricide to genocide as the norm of violence in the modern era is not easy to absorb. Not too long ago I engaged in a discussion with a historian who disputed my claim that America's lethargy in response to the plight of the Jews just prior to and during World War II resulted largely from a failure of imagination, a refusal or inability to etch on some internal monitor the details of the calamity that was consuming European Jewry. He argued that by 1942 Washington had "knowledge" of the death camps and "confirmed" reports of the mass murder under way. Actually, we had such information as early as the summer of 1941, when German mobile killing units in the Soviet Union began systematically executing the Jewish population in areas the army had conquered. "Confirmed knowledge," however, is a verbal expression that does little to threaten the repose of a mind outraged from a distance and privy only to the data that telegrams, communiques, and written summaries can convey.

It seems to me a little naive to expect governments and citizens to react with dispatch to accounts of disaster that are couched in general language, lacking specific facts. When Gerhardt Riegner, head of the Geneva office of the World Jewish Congress, learned on August 1, 1942 from a sympathetic German industrialist with connections in the Nazi hierarchy that a plan had been reviewed in Hitler's headquarters for the murder of all Jews in Nazi-occupied lands, he sent this information to Rabbi Stephen S. Wise in America, who passed it on to the US State Department. This was eight months *after* the first killing center had been opened at Chelmno in Poland. Would the State Department not have delayed interminably, "verifying" and then pigeonholing such stories, if Riegner

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

had been able to describe how the Jews at Chelmno, who were gassed in vans with carbon monoxide on the way to the site of mass burial, sometimes arrived stunned instead of dead but were thrown into the graves anyway, and buried alive? Would the response have been different if he had been able to tell about the Jewish worker at Chelmno who, when he opened one of the vans, pulled out the corpses of his wife and two children and leaped into the grave beside their bodies asking to be shot and buried with them? (The Germans dragged him out, declaring that *they* decided when a Jew was to die.)[3] Of course, Riegner did not have these details, though similar evidence was given to the Polish underground by two women who had escaped from Chelmno, and it was transmitted to the Polish government in exile in London. It probably was not believed. But it seems clear that the meaning and the impact of an expression like "confirmed knowledge" depends on how that knowledge is being confirmed, and the language used to confirm it.[4]

Those who tried to summon Americans to action on behalf of the victims faced a double impasse: they lacked a vocabulary to portray the moments of atrocity I have just related; and they addressed an audience unable to hear because their mind-set was not tuned, and had never been tuned, to the kind of crisis that was unfolding in Europe. Even the Christian courier Jan Karski, who had visited the Warsaw ghetto twice and had also spent a few hours disguised as an Estonian guard in the Belzec death camp, and then was sent by the Polish underground to England and America to give an eyewitness account, could not impress on the skeptical minds of Anthony Eden, Felix Frankfurter, and Franklin Delano Roosevelt the enormity of the crimes being committed against the Jews and the absolute necessity of finding some way of limiting the murders.[5]

The system of values cherished by the American mind, with its stress on individual success and an infinitely improving future, nurtures a psychology of mental comfort that discourages encounters with tragedy, to say nothing of the atrocity that an event like the Holocaust requires us to absorb. But in the case of the Holocaust, this attitude was not confined to a particular culture. Even the victims were unprepared to handle the tales of slaughter drifting back to the ghettos from the killing centers. Abraham Lewin,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in *A Diary of the Warsaw Ghetto,* drafts the dilemma of digesting "confirmed knowledge" of the unthinkable in the very heart of the maelstrom:

> Isolated refugees who arrive here literally by miracle from Treblinka bring reports that freeze the blood in the veins. The killing-machine there never rests. In the past few days Jews from Radomsko were brought there and murdered. News of this kind causes us hellish torments. Has anyone ever described the suffering of someone who has been condemned to death and who is to go to the gallows? Even the Russian artists, of whom the greatest is Dostoevsky, have not succeeded in giving a true description of what transpires in the depths of the soul of an innocent person who has been sentenced to death. When I hear these accounts of Treblinka, something begins to twist and turn in my heart. The fear of "that" which must come is, perhaps, stronger than the torments a person feels when he gives up his soul. Will these terrible agonies of the spirit call up a literary response? Will there emerge a new Bialik able to write a new Book of Lamentations, a new "In the Town of Slaughter"?[6]

In calling for a new Book of Lamentations, Lewin, like Dan Pagis, dismisses old scriptural models as sources of inspiration for portraying the murder of European Jewry. The quest for analogy, whether by literary artist or historian, is the task that bedevils anyone aiming to initiate the imagination of an audience into the singular realm of the unthinkable. The crime of our century, as Lewin predicts here, will be the chronic story of men, women, and children trying to stay alive in an environment that is moving them relentlessly toward an intrusive death that bears no relation to their previous lives. How does one describe the "fear of 'that' which must come" so as to differentiate it from ordinary dying?

In a desperate effort to make sense of his grim surroundings, Lewin himself is drawn in two directions at once. On the one hand, he lapses into the language of consolation, born of the psychology of mental ease, to deflect implications too horrible to admit: "It is impossible that so much innocent blood should be spilled without retribution. The day of judgement, the day of reckoning must and will come." But it never came. The habit of taking refuge in such rhetoric when one is left powerless to change one's situation is understandable, and Lewin seems aware that he is doing this, because virtually in the same breath he adds a

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

contrary idea: "The level of Nazi brutality quite simply lies beyond our power to comprehend. It is inconceivable to us and will seem quite incredible to future generations, the product of our imagination, over-excited by misery and anger."[7] But the "inconceivable," in this case as well as in subsequent instances of mass violence in the post-Holocaust period, is nothing more than a name for a reality that we are unprepared to accept, because it either offends our sense of order or threatens to unravel the curtain before which we ply our daily lives.[8] If some forms of human misery do indeed still lie beyond our powers to comprehend, it would be irresponsible to allow our own psychological and intellectual hesitation to estrange us from that misery. The only alternative, a complex and difficult one, is to find ways of making the inconceivable conceivable, until it invades our consciousness without meeting protest or dismay. Drowning in daily episodes of atrocity, Lewin responds to the *experience* of his own muted tongue and stunned imagination, not to a rhetorical invocation of silence. A "new Bialik" would have to abandon, not rediscover, the literary techniques and imaginative vision of his predecessors. But such rejection might introduce a chaotic rupture into some of our most cherished views, like time as uninterrupted chronology or history as automatic progress—a rupture that many commentators are loath to embrace.[9]

In classical Greek literature the herald led a perilous life, because as a bearer of ill tidings he so often provoked the wrath of the recipient of his message. When the escaped messenger from Treblinka brought the evil news that the Germans were gassing all the Jews and throwing their bodies into flaming pits, he was not punished, but simply rebuffed as a madman by most members of the Jewish Council. Oddly, individuals and communities clamor for more stories of extraordinary *virtue,* no matter how exaggerated: holy sightings and unlikely miracles quickly rouse public enthusiasm, and the locales of the supposed events are soon turned into sacred shrines. But an unholy world with millions of victims and few heroes has little popular appeal, since it proves inhospitable to the romanticizing imagination. We need to defend ourselves against reports of such radical evil. "Inconceivable" becomes a frightful word chiefly when it refers to atrocities like the Holocaust that offer us no possibility for transcendence. Such

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

verbal threats prompt us to build bunkers of inner security to shield us from their assault.

It may be useful to *classify* human misery in terms of social problems, but this rarely generates widespread concern. We need a special kind of portraiture to sketch the anguish of people who have no agency in their fate because their enemy is not a discernible antagonist but a ruthless racial ideology, an uncontrollable virus, or, more recently, a shell from a distant hillside exploding amid unsuspecting victims in a hospital or a market square. Before we can present a program for dealing with human misery, we need to *represent* that misery. This requires talents that will not flinch from physical outrages bearing no resemblance to the sufferings of an earlier era, or from horrors untempered by moral meaning, whether plague, poverty, or war, that were so often allied to a language of sanctity, virtue, or sentimental fervor.

Those talents include not only a verbal facility but frank consent to a philosophical shift about human expectation that allows us to work with limited aspirations, rather than the unlimited ones bequeathed by our Enlightenment and Romantic heritage. Unfortunately, what I call the alarmed vision feeds on a skimpy diet, one that fails to satisfy the appetite of those who "normalize" violence, disease, and other human abuses by placing them in the simple context of an agenda for improving the future. Few regard with enthusiasm the spectacle of diminished promise that the repeated abuses of our era have thrust upon us. The pragmatic decision to choose "reconciliation" over justice in places like Argentina, Chile, Haiti, and Israel (to be followed, perhaps, by Rwanda and Bosnia-Herzegovina) creates a dubious legacy for the worldwide victims of abuse and an even more doubtful precedent for those who would seize and misuse power in the future. Defusing alarm by deflecting atrocity may create a fragile peace in communities wearied by years of anguish, but it would be less than honest to ignore the price we pay for such a strategic form of avoidance.

Such avoidance resembles the attitude of those who use the texts of Holocaust testimonies as examples of "working through" past traumas toward a goal of reconciled understanding and liberating growth into the future. But the subtexts of those testimonies reveal a reality that is much more relevant to the issues we are exploring here. They reflect hundreds of instances of unredeemed and unre-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

deemable loss, giving us a glimpse of how language shorn of a spiritual bond can shock the imagination into an alarmed vision—the only kind of vision that may goad us into interceding in situations of atrocity before they have spent their energy, leaving negotiated "reconciliation" as the only practical course of action. Such situations mock the good intentions of utopian hopes. They introduce us to a reversal of expectation that lies at the heart of any attempt to appreciate modern suffering. The Holocaust and subsequent large-scale atrocities exist in an orbit void of the usual consoling vocabulary: martyrdom, the dignity of dying, guilty conscience,[10] moral rigor, remorse, even villainy, which in literary tragedy so clearly distinguishes the victim from his or her persecutor. None of these verbal categories illuminate the devastation of the Holocaust, or for that matter the killing of millions by Stalin in the 1930s by enforced famine, the ravages in Cambodia, or the merciless destruction of civilian populations in Yugoslavia today.

In a world where the goal of life so often seems to be the death of others, we are forced to regard the reversal of expectations rather than the fulfillment of dreams as the model for being and behavior in some communities. Ironically, Nazi Germany nearly succeeded in establishing a prototype for this social paradigm, by equating its extermination policies with the dream of a Third Reich cleansed of Jews. A healthy community thus became, by definition, one in which the death of some was decisively tied to the life of the remainder. Because such a system violates our own moral and spiritual beliefs, we find it difficult, if not impossible, to imagine. But history pays little heed to what we find desirable or imaginable. The Holocaust and later atrocities have invaded our sense of stable living and normal dying, leaving us a legacy that colonizes the future with nightmares of frustration rather than dreams of fulfillment.

It would help to be able to call this condition a treatable trauma, but if the testimonies of hundreds of Holocaust survivors are to be trusted, that clinical formula simply will not serve the truth of their ordeal. As we shall see, their memories are not symptoms, nor in telling their tales do they seek some form of reintegration into their community—a goal they have long since achieved. Well-intentioned intervention after the fact is no substitute for strong action to prevent atrocities from occurring. Painful memories are

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

not always disabling, and narratives about them—at least this is true of Holocaust testimony—rarely "liberate" witnesses from a past they cannot and do not wish to escape. For them, forgetting would be the ultimate desecration, a "cure" the ultimate illusion. As for renewal or rebirth, such monuments to hope cannot be built from the ruins of a memory crammed with images of flame and ash.

The myth that such a patient needs to be freed from his or her past originates in a number of questionable assumptions. The first is the designation "patient," which immediately creates a clinical relationship and transforms testimony into a form of therapy. The second is the premise that survivors of atrocities experience time only chronologically, so that the present appears to follow the past and precede the future. Testimony may *sound* chronological to an auditor or audience, but the narrator, a mental witness rather than a temporal one, is "out of time" as he or she tells the story. This is often the case in Holocaust discourse; we are led astray or baffled by the lack of a language to confront the difference between the chronological current, which flows until we channel it between the permanent banks of historical narrative, and durational persistence, which cannot overflow the blocked reservoir of its own moment in memory and hence never enters what we call the stream of time.

Anyone who hears these testimonies will understand that for the witnesses time is durational as well as chronological, and that durational time is experienced continuously, not sequentially as a memory from which one can be liberated. The notion that a Holocaust survivor—I suspect one might say this of any survivor of atrocity—can generalize his or her personal suffering and move beyond the role of victim derives from an unfamiliarity with how durational time assails the memory of a witness. That is why I believe that all attempts to investigate the effects of atrocity on a group or a community must begin with the narratives of individual victims, and especially with moments of durational time, which mock the very idea that traumas can be healed.

The speaker is Bessie K., a woman who is being interviewed with her present husband, also a survivor. Their chronological story is familiar: they met after the war, married, came to America, raised a family, and have led happy and successful lives. But this

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

offers no compensation for what they are about to tell, which gives us a glimpse of the role durational time plays in their memories and their lives. During their testimony, they sit at opposite ends of the same couch, isolated and insulated, each dwelling in a series of durational moments that they share with no one. As so often in these testimonies, the crucial instants are not those when one explains how one survived, but how a member of one's family died. On their deepest level, these life stories are really death stories, which include the death of the self in ways we still need to interpret. In these instances, "suffering" seems a futile term, since its traditional associations with healing or a process for gaining moral maturity, to say nothing of conventional theological ideas like salvation and redemption, consign it to a lexicon of outmoded vocabulary. Any thought of legitimizing such "suffering" through treatment becomes an offense to the witness.

Bessie K.'s narrative is preceded by her husband's account of his farewell to his brother, ill with typhus, who was taken with other inmates from the camp infirmary and shot. She tries to enter into his distress by passing him a tissue, but he rejects it with a flick of the wrist, saying "I don't need it." Then he tells of his brother's last gesture—giving him his shirt after saying "I don't need it." The memory of his brother's death consumes him, shrouds him in a way that prevents intrusion, even from his wife. She then begins the story of her own unforgettable durational moment:

> I had a baby boy. . . .They took us to the buses, they brought us to a big airfield. And nearby were the trains, the cattle trains. And. . .I look back: I think for a while I was in a daze; I didn't know what was happening actually. I saw they [were] taking away the men separate, the children separate, and the women separate. So I had the baby, and I took the coat what I had, the bundle, and I wrapped [it] around the baby and I put it on my left side, because I saw the Germans were saying left or right, and I went through with the baby. But the baby was short of breath, started to choke, and it started to cry, so the German called me back, he said in German "What do you have there?" Now: I didn't know what to do, because everything was so fast and everything happened so suddenly. I wasn't prepared for it.
>
> To look back, the experience was—I think I was numb, or something happened to me, I don't know. But I wasn't there. And he

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> stretched out his arms I should hand him over the bundle; and I hand him over the bundle. And this is the last time I had the bundle.
>
> But as I look back, I don't think that I had anybody with me. I was alone, within myself. And since that time I think all my life I been alone. [Meanwhile, the camera pans to the other end of the couch on which she is sitting to settle on her present husband, Jack, whose face is a mask of grief and despair.] Even when I met Jack, I didn't tell Jack my past. Jack just find out recently. For me, I was dead. I died, and I didn't want to hear nothing, and I didn't want to know nothing, and I didn't want to talk about it, and I didn't want to admit to myself that this happened to me.

She is deported to Stutthof concentration camp, where she meets the doctor who had operated on her infected breast in the ghetto before her deportation. She continues:

> And when [the doctor] saw me there she was so happy to see me, and right away she says "What happened, where's the baby, what happened to the baby?" And right there I said "What baby?" I said to the doctor "What baby? I didn't have a baby. I don't know of any baby."

Then she pauses for an instant, nods her head, taps her brow with a finger, and concludes, "That's what it did to me."[11]

This fragment of narrative illustrates why we must be cautious when trying to compare examples of individual or community suffering. Certainly there may be some overlap between the experience of this bereft mother and of parents who have lost children more recently through acts of extreme violence in other locales. But universalizing instances of atrocity only diminishes their private impact. Understanding the differences is crucial: the duration, nature, and extent of the violation, the role of the aggressor, the defensive resources available to the victims—issues like these enjoin us to view each atrocity within its own historical, geographical, cultural, and psychological context. Some victims may indeed respond to treatment, may find group discussion useful, may need to escape from the cocoon of remembering that traps them in a corrosive past. But Bessie K. fits none of these models. When she says "since that time I think all my life I been alone" while sitting next to her husband, she is not complaining or asking for sympathy; she is explaining that the passage of time cannot

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

appease a durational memory. She is redefining the meaning of being "alone, within myself," making it a typical outgrowth of the disintegration of her first family, not to be undone by the emergence of a second one. The unappeasable experience is part of her inner reality, and though the optimistic American temperament winces at the notion, Bessie K. knows that what she has survived is an event to be endured, not a trauma to be healed.

But her narrative reveals even more. The Holocaust has collapsed conventional distinctions between living and dying as separate—indeed antithetical—states of being. We will never begin to understand the legacy of atrocity in the modern era until we realize what this means. When, after telling of surrendering her baby, Bessie K. insists, "For me I was dead. I died, and I didn't want to hear nothing, and I didn't want to know nothing," she invites us to reflect on a consequence of atrocity that surfaces in numerous survivor testimonies—the condition of having missed one's intended destiny by surviving one's own death.[12] The death of her child is her own death too, not in fantasy but in reality, a permanent intrusion on her post-Holocaust existence. It is also a form of verbal disturbance, since no language exists—certainly not a tame word like "suffering"—to describe the role of such durational moments in the lives of those who have lived them.

Bessie K.'s durational moment is part of the normal experience of the death-camp universe. If it seems abnormal or traumatic to us, that is because we approach it from our familiar perspective of chronological time. It is not part of her historical past, but of her durational present, and as such is both unforgotten and unforgettable. She is defined, not disabled, by her memory, a memory that can be told but not shared, because unlike loss through illness or accident, in her mind this was a "death" without parallel or analogy. It is neither desirable nor possible for her to "forget" it. Such expectations betray our own need for amnesia, because narratives like hers threaten our dependence on coherence, reason, and order, the moral and psychological balance that constitutes, for us, civilized being.

Testimony like this should not summon us to the healing of victims, but to a revision of the myth of civilized being. Human nature can no longer be set in opposition to inhuman nature, as if one were the norm and the other a correctable aberration. Atrocity

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the form of violence that maims and kills others has become a "normal" rather than a pathological expression of the self—not of all selves, to be sure, but enough to cause us to question ancient premises about moral instincts and spiritual purpose. In its display of power, the act of atrocity brings a fulfillment similar to the one we usually associate with gestures of charity or love. The tiresome cliché about people who do not learn from the past being doomed to repeat it persists as our favorite buffer against facing human and historical truth. Perhaps it is time to admit that atrocity in the past does not discourage but in fact *invites* atrocity in the future. From the scandalous carnage of World War I to the innumerable murders of the Leninist and Stalinist regimes, the countless victims of the Holocaust (condensed into a single abstract figure, six million) to the bloody outrages in Bosnia and Rwanda, our age of atrocity slips into and out of consciousness with the casual appeal of a transient news item. We fail to decipher the clues that would rouse us to an alarmed vision.

I am not sure that we can find a way of sensitizing this numbness, in whose protective custody we live to avoid the unsettling spectacle of the deaths of others. But I am sure that one useful beginning is with the voices of those who were plunged into a death-in-life milieu from which survival did not bring escape. The roots of the quandary began to appear in the camps themselves. One survivor of the liquidation of the Vilna ghetto (eleven years old at the time), who was sent with her mother to Kaiserwald near Riga, tells of the kind of discussion she used to have with a friend in the camp:

> You kind of got laid back a little about being killed. The prime targets of our thoughts was always being killed. One of my friends. . .she and I went through—we met in Kaiserwald. She was from Liebau (people came there from Liebau too) and she and I were about the same age and conversations would be: "Let's see, how would you like to be killed? Would you like to be killed by the gas chamber? By being beaten? By hunger? Or the bullet?" And she and I agreed—the bullet. So our conversations were *not* building a future, what we are going to do when we grow up, you know how kids talk, I'm gonna be this and I'm gonna be that. Our hope was that when our time comes, that we will die by the bullet, so that we will suffer less.[13]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

This is, of course, an extreme reaction to a death-stressed environment, but at the time other options for Jews seemed unlikely, and the witness is trying to recall her former state of mind honestly. It confirms the importance of reversal of expectation in contemporary thought, since the strategy focuses not on how to be more happy, but how to suffer less. The most dramatic examples of what I call durational time in these testimonies invariably terminate in death, real or imagined, imagined not as fantasy or illusion, but as the end of what *should have been,* that does not violate but grows logically out of the present situation. What we think of as chronology, with its investment in a long-term future, had already died. For many inmates, the shrunken margins of space in the camps were accompanied by a contraction in the boundaries of time, and within that area of constricted space and time the promise of death, the doom of dying at the hands of their persecutors, scarred the memories of those who would be lucky enough to outlive that doom.

How else are we to explain the testimony of a witness who, years after the event, remembers with apprehension the challenges of ordinary life when he reentered chronological time. After his release from the camps he came to America, where he tried to settle into a normal pattern of existence. But because his life had been so *unsettled* during the war, he was left with a legacy of unresolved conflict that emerges starkly from his testimony. Following more than five hours of reviewing the destruction of all but one member of his extensive family, he abruptly begins to speak of his fear of marriage and starting a new family after such ruin. "A home," he says, preparing for his narrative of how duration invades chronology, "is something you lose." This is a classic example of the reversal of expectation that an atrocity like the Holocaust has grafted onto our sense of modern reality. Nevertheless, he finds a job and marries. He has certainly earned an unimpeded future, but we are naive to anticipate this prospect. Unimpeded futures are now part of our nostalgia about the past. He reenacts in his dreams and even in certain physical responses during his waking hours the missed destiny of dying that still haunts him from the world of the death camps:

> We bought a home, and started to establish ourselves, and things were getting better—but I had some drawbacks. I was working

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> hard, trying to forget myself, forgetting the past, but it came back to me like a recording in my head. After we got married, for the longest time—we were already then in a family way, and things were looking up to me. During the day I was working hard, and studying, and trying to get ahead and establish myself—and at night, I was fighting the Germans, really fighting. And the SS were after me all the time, and I was trying to save my mother and my sister [gassed at Auschwitz]. I was jumping off from building to building, and they were shooting at me, and each time the bullet went through my heart. And I was sitting up not knowing at night in my bed, and I was screaming, you know it was hard on [my wife]. It must have been hard on her, and we didn't know how to handle it. I didn't know how to handle it. I was making believe. . .forgetting about it and going on during the day doing my things. And at night she was calming me down, she says "It's OK, it's OK, you're here, don't worry about it," and I was waking up and screaming at night and each time a bullet went through my heart.[14]

He returned to work, but his left arm began to pain him badly; he had difficulty driving the car, and one day a coworker rushed him to the hospital with the symptoms of a heart attack. The doctors found nothing physically wrong with him.

Is there such a feat as recharting your own death, or, perhaps more precisely, someone else's intention to kill you, so that the frustrated conclusion of durational time in the camps achieves some form of completion at a later date? The loneliness that surfaces as a theme in so many of these testimonies—like the mother who, after surrendering her infant to the Germans, declares "Since that time I think that all my life I been alone," while sitting next to her husband—results from a separation caused by the murder of members of one's family, and that in turn leads to an internal rewriting of the scenario of life to somehow include one's own death. Here, agency invades necessity, defiance replaces inertia, and the victim, by fighting the Germans and trying to save his mother and sister, embraces and *earns* the death that has already devoured them. But his waking life thwarts this, and his missed encounter with the destiny from which he escaped but so many others did not continues to exert its force as a subtext of his narrative.

Time does not close the gap between the text of his ongoing life and the subtext of his unpacified past, the unreconciled and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

unreconcilable stress between chronology and duration. The issue grows even more dramatic if we turn to a comparatively recent *New Yorker* article addressing the problem of preserving the ruins of Auschwitz-Birkenau that time and nature are gradually eroding. The remnants of mass murder are also disintegrating, the mountains of human hair and suitcases and prostheses that stun the visitor into imagining the huge number of victims consumed by the insatiable death-machinery of the place. But the author cites an even more perplexing question mentioned by the deputy director of the Auschwitz museum: "Recently," she tells him, "a number of Holocaust survivors have contacted us and asked that their remains be buried at Birkenau. . . .Birkenau is a cemetery," she adds, "but not a cemetery where you can conduct funerals."[15]

For the moment, museum officials do not know what to do with this request, which seems grotesque only to those who ignore how the "missed destiny" of dying in Auschwitz continues to raid the memories of those who outlived their doom there. Together with George S.'s testimony, it reflects an ongoing need that many survivors feel to connect their lives to the death of others. This is the final reversal of expectation to disturb the serenity of our private consciousness, to say nothing of the smooth flow of chronological time. Few events have done more to create a tension between what we wish and what we know—if we allow ourselves to know it—than the atrocity of the Holocaust. The experience of its victims, those who survived and those who did not, permanently darkens the future by bequeathing us a legacy of unreconciled understanding. The passage of time heals many wounds, but this event leaves only a vexing and painful scab. No one is happy to discard the illusion that there is meaning in such suffering, that there is something to be learned from it, that the anguish of human cruelty can be minimized by calling it spiritual discipline. We live in an age haunted not by the kind of suffering that religion and literature have taught us to accept, but by a spectacle of atrocity, on smaller and larger scales, that no past traditions have prepared us to absorb. Thus, any effort to aid its victims, on an individual or community basis, must begin by acknowledging that the usual consolations may not apply, that efforts to heal by forgetting the past and bravely facing the future might only betray a misunderstanding of the effects of atrocity on the human body, mind, and spirit.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Taking or watching Holocaust testimony is a humbling experience. You begin with the hope of creating order out of chaos, finding patterns in the survival narrative that can be organized into what some call a "syndrome." You imagine you can design a new template of evil to gain insight into the motives that lead to mass murder. Then you hear the story of a young Jewish woman who was thrust alive into the crematorium by two SS men because she refused to follow their order to undress and scratched one of them on the cheek when he tried to force her to do so. And suddenly your faith in the logic of human nature collapses. Exasperated by my own inability to envision anecdotes like the ones I was hearing in the testimonies, I revised my assumptions about shareable memory and collective consciousness. Once we enter the tentative world of duration, leaving behind the security of chronology, we realize that life after atrocity is not a call to new unity but only a form of private and communal endurance, based on mutual toleration rather than mutual love. Though it is less than the utopia humanistic enlightenment once dreamed of achieving, all our efforts at rescue and remedy, nurture and renewal must grow from this insight.

ENDNOTES

[1]The translation is mine. For another version of this poem, as well as others by Dan Pagis, see *Points of Departure,* trans. Stephen Mitchell (Philadelphia, Pa.: Jewish Publication Society of America, 1981).

[2]A main thrust of Pagis's poem is what Harold Bloom calls the "anxiety of influence." Hebrew literature of catastrophe continues to shape subsequent writing in that tradition, but the Holocaust and the "deportation" of Abel and Eve forces on the literary imagination a re-visioning and hence a revisioning of Scripture. Holocaust and Scripture now conspire to alter each other's texts.

[3]This episode is recounted in Claude Lanzmann's film *Shoah* by one of the two survivors of the Chelmno death camp. Similar narratives may be found in Martin Gilbert, *Holocaust: A History of the Jews of Europe during the Second World War* (New York: Holt, Rinehart and Winston, 1985); Charlotte Delbo's trilogy, *Auschwitz and After,* trans. Rosette C. Lamont (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1995), esp. vol. I; and Lawrence L. Langer, *Holocaust Testimonies: The Ruins of Memory* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1991). A comprehensive history of the Auschwitz death camp is *Anatomy of the Auschwitz Death Camp,* ed. Yisrael Gutman and Michael Berenbaum (Bloomington, Ind.: Indiana University Press, 1994). For further details about

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the killing facilities, see Yitzhak Arad, *Belzec, Sobibor, Treblinka: The Operation Reinhard Death Camps* (Bloomington, Ind.: Indiana University Press, 1987). The full story of the Riegner telegram and the US State Department's response may be found in David S. Wyman, *The Abandonment of the Jews: America and the Holocaust, 1941–1945* (New York: Pantheon Books, 1984). In addition to the failure to imagine the disaster threatening European Jewry, Wyman lists Roosevelt's fear of alienating non-Jewish supporters as well as anti-Semitism among higher echelons of State Department officials as reasons for the sluggish response to the Jewish situation. The public, too, including parts of the American Jewish community, did not view with enthusiasm an expanded immigration policy during years of lingering economic depression.

[4]See Walter Laqueur, *The Terrible Secret: Suppression of the Truth about Hitler's "Final Solution"* (Boston, Mass.: Little, Brown, 1981) and Walter Laqueur and Richard Breitman, *Breaking the Silence* (New York: Simon and Schuster, 1988). Of course, even if Riegner could have provided intimate details of atrocity to convey the visceral horrors of the Final Solution, his more precise reports still might have been translated by the bureaucracy in Washington into technical memos shuffled from office to office, as was done with his original telegrams. The mentality prevailing in the State Department seemed more interested in managing the story than in responding to it with some form of prompt action.

[5]Karski tells part of his story in Lanzmann's film *Shoah*. The full narrative appears (well before the end of World War II, it should be noted) in Jan Karski, *Story of a Secret State* (Boston, Mass.: Houghton Mifflin, 1944).

[6]Abraham Lewin, *A Cup of Tears: A Diary of the Warsaw Ghetto*, ed. Antony Polonsky, trans. Christopher Hutton (New York: Basil Blackwell, 1989), 236–37. These questions are dated 9 January 1943, one week before the last entry in the diary, when Lewin and his daughter were presumably rounded up and deported to their deaths in Treblinka. Haim Nahman Bialik (1873–1934) was the leading poet of the modern Hebrew revival. His "In the Town [or City] of Slaughter" was a response to the Kishinev pogrom in tsarist Russia in 1903, when forty-nine Jews were killed.

[7]Ibid., 81.

[8]Perhaps the greatest threat of all to the stage on which we enact our existence is that behind the curtain nothing exists. But few of us are willing to contend with the possibility of meaninglessness in our lives.

[9]For a detailed discussion of the influence of traditional Jewish catastrophe writings on later Holocaust literature, see David G. Roskies, *Against the Apocalypse: Responses to Catastrophe in Modern Jewish Culture* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1984). Roskies argues that a direct line leads from one to the other, allowing for no permanent ideational rupture between, for example, depictions of pogroms and depictions of the destruction of European Jewry during World War II. All such efforts have common roots in a literature of lamentation. For an alternate point of view, see Lawrence L. Langer, *The Holocaust and the Literary Imagination* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1975).

[10]The question of "survivor guilt" continues to haunt us. The psychological community, especially in America, has made the idea an unchallenged premise about

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the survival experience. But in an unpublished paper presented at a conference sponsored by the US Holocaust Memorial Museum Research Center in December 1993, Norwegian psychiatrist and Auschwitz survivor Leo Eitinger argued that "most survivors had the same self-reproaches one can hear in all cases of losses: 'If I had done this or that or if I had not done this or that, perhaps he or she would have lived today.'" Such "guilt," which Eitinger prefers to call self-reproach, is not specific to survivors but represents a common human response. Psychiatrist Anna Ornstein, also a Holocaust survivor, shrewdly refines this idea: "The frequently cited guilt in survivors, I believe, may not be related to having survived while others had died, but rather to the survivors' difficulty in reconciling their behavior and moral conduct during the Holocaust with their conduct and behavior under civilized conditions." See Anna Ornstein, "The Holocaust: Reconstruction and the Establishment of Psychic Continuity," in *The Reconstruction of Trauma: Its Significance in Clinical Work,* ed. Arnold Rothstein (Madison, Conn.: International Universities Press, 1986), 184–85.

[11]Fortunoff Video Archive for Holocaust Testimony, Yale University, composite tape A-67, testimony of Bessie K. and Jacob K.

[12]For a detailed discussion of the uniqueness of the Holocaust as an epistemological event (rather than as an illustration of comparative suffering), see Steven T. Katz, *The Holocaust in Historical Context (Volume One): The Holocaust and Mass Death Before the Modern Age* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1994). The concept of having missed one's "intended destiny" is born of the German intention to murder every living Jew with no exceptions, an intention that distinguishes the Holocaust from other atrocities, such as the ones in Cambodia and Rwanda. As Katz argues, the distinction is between historical events, not the quality or quantity of the suffering.

[13]Fortunoff Video Archive for Holocaust Testimony, Yale University, tape T-1879, testimony of Judith G.

[14]Ibid., tape 938, testimony of George S.

[15]See Timothy W. Ryback, "A Reporter at Large: Evidence of Evil," *The New Yorker,* 15 November 1993, 78.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

It is simply unacceptable that, in the closing days of the twentieth century, in so many countries the chronically mentally ill are still abandoned in conditions of filth and brutality, without treatment or rehabilitation, so that their humanity is betrayed. It is unacceptable that tens of millions of patients with depressive disorder, a highly treatable condition, suffer the torment, the lost opportunities, the high costs, and the real risk for suicide because doctors and nurses are neither trained to diagnose this disorder nor encouraged to give its treatment priority. It is unacceptable that mothers, in all too many nations and cultures, are regularly beaten by alcoholic spouses, who steal the family's food monies at the same time that they deprive their wives of their safety and dignity. That those mothers often have no recourse in the community cannot continue. It is also intolerable that seven and eight year old girls face the horror of being sold into sexual slavery as part of a globally commercialized system of sexual abuse that fosters criminality and spreads AIDS. The abuses. . .are all unacceptable.

Robert Desjarlais, Leon Eisenberg, Byron Good, and Arthur Kleinman, eds.

From Executive Summary to *World Mental Health: Problems and Priorities in Low-Income Countries*

New York: Oxford University Press, 1995

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Veena Das

Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain

In repeatedly trying to write the meaning(s) of violence against women in Indian society, I find that the languages of pain through which social sciences could gaze at, touch, or become textual bodies on which this pain is written often elude me.[1] The enormity of the violence is not in question. The very moment of the birth of India as a nation free from colonial domination was also the scene of unprecedented collective violence. One of the earliest studies of this violence stated that history had not known a fratricidal war of such dimensions: "Decrepit old men, defenseless women, helpless young children, infants in arms by the thousands were done to death by Muslim, Hindu and Sikh fanatics."[2] One of the signatures of this violence was the large-scale abduction and rape of women. The earliest estimates put the figure of abducted women from both sides of the border at close to one hundred thousand. In the legislative debates in the Constituent Assembly it was stated, on December 15, 1949, that thirty-three thousand Hindu or Sikh women had been abducted by Muslims, while the Pakistan Government had claimed that fifty thousand Muslim women had been abducted by Hindu or Sikh men. I have elsewhere analyzed the discourses of the State on abducted women and their recovery as well as the composition of the personal voice in accounts by women.[3] I want to reenter this scene of devastation to ask how one should inhabit such a world that has been made strange through the desolating experience of violence and loss. Stanley Cavell describes this as the Emersonian gesture of approaching the world through a kind of mourning for it.[4]

Veena Das is Professor of Sociology at the University of Delhi.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

In the work of mourning in many societies it is the transactions between language and body, especially in the gendered division of labor, by which the antiphony of language and silence recreates the world in the face of tragic loss. It is not that in turning to these transactions I expect to find direct answers to the questions on violence and the problem of meaning, but I do want to reenter some of the texts with which I have engaged earlier to make the dialogue deeper on two questions:[5] *1)* How is it that the imaging of the project of nationalism in India came to include the appropriation of bodies of women as objects on which the desire for nationalism could be brutally inscribed and a memory for the future made? *2)* Did forms of mourning find a place in the recreation of the world in, for instance, the discursive formations in post-Independence India?

In forming these questions I am borrowing a metaphor from Stanley Cavell—the metaphor of philosophy as a river that flows between the two shores of the metaphysical and the everyday. The river does not have to ask which of these two shores is more important for its existence.[6] But from the present position in which I write, one appears as the distant shore on which events of violence, brutal rape and abduction of women, and painful inscriptions of nationalist slogans on the bodies of women made sudden appearances. One is never certain whether the distance of these images is an optical illusion, for there is always the temptation, as in family and nationalist narratives, to cast away these images from the shore of everyday experience to some distant unseen horizon. Yet, one must ask what this brutalization did to the experiences of self, community, and nation. At the very least these scenes of violence constitute the (perhaps metaphysical) threshold within which the scenes of ordinary life are lived.

The second shore is the near one, on which the experience of loss in the flow of everyday life makes the voices of women "public" in the process of mourning. In the genre of lamentation, women have control both through their bodies and through their language—grief is articulated through the body, for instance, by infliction of grievous hurt on oneself, "objectifying" and making present the inner state,[7] and is finally given a home in language. Thus the transactions between body and language lead to an articulation of the world in which the strangeness of the world

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

revealed by death, by its non-inhabitability, can be transformed into a world in which one can dwell again, in full awareness of a life that has to be lived in loss. This is one path towards healing—women call such healing simply the power to endure.

And now we see the two shores together within a single frame. Was it possible for women and men to take this image of healing and recreate that which died when the desire for nationalism and autonomy from colonial subjugation became metamorphosed into sexual violation?[8] Could that which died be named, acknowledged, and mourned? Or would one be condemned to dwell alone and nameless in the ruins of memory, as Lawrence Langer calls them?[9]

Some realities need to be fictionalized before they can be apprehended. This is apparent in the weight of the distinction between the three registers of the real, the symbolic, and the imaginary in the work of Lacan, and in Castoriadis's formulation of the necessity of working on the register of the imaginary for the conceptualization of society itself.[10] I shall allow myself three scenes, or phantasms, that provide a theoretical scaffolding to the issues I address. In these three scenes I call upon the words of the philosopher Wittgenstein, the poet-novelist-essayist Tagore, and the short story writer Sadat Hasan Manto, as persons who responded to the call of the world in the register of the imaginary. Tagore and Manto are important to me for they answered in the sounds and senses of the Indian languages to the scenes of devastation; Wittgenstein because he showed the possibilities of imagination of pain within a rigorous philosophical grammar. In placing their texts within mine, I can simultaneously be there and not be there. I hope I shall be evoking these texts not in the manner of a thief who has stolen another voice but in the manner of one who pawns herself to the words of this other.[11]

I

The first scene is from Wittgenstein's *The Blue and Brown Books* on the question of how my pain may reside in another body:

> In order to see that it is conceivable that one person should have pain in another person's body, one must examine what sorts of facts we call criteria for a pain being in a certain place. . . .Suppose I feel

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> a pain which on the evidence of the pain alone, e.g. with closed eyes, I should call a pain in my left hand. Someone asks me to touch the painful spot with my right hand. I do so and looking around perceive that I am touching my neighbor's hand. . . .This would be pain *felt* in another's body.[12]

In this movement between bodies, the sentence "I am in pain" becomes the conduit through which I may move out of an inexpressible privacy and suffocation of my pain. This does not mean that I am understood. Wittgenstein uses the route of a philosophical grammar to say that this is not an indicative statement, although it may have the formal appearance of one. It is the beginning of a language game. Pain, in this rendering, is not that inexpressible something that destroys communication or marks an exit from one's existence in language. Instead, it makes a claim asking for acknowledgment, which may be given or denied. In either case, it is not a referential statement that is simply pointing to an inner object.

What is fascinating for me is that in drawing the scene of the pathos of pain, Wittgenstein creates language as the bodying forth of words. Where is my pain—in touching you to point out the location of that pain—has my pointing finger—there it is—found your body, which my pain (our pain) can inhabit, at least for that moment when I close my eyes and touch your hand? And if the language for the inexpressibility of pain is always falling short of my need for its plenitude, then is this not the sense of disappointment that human beings have with themselves and the language that is given to them? But also, does the whole task of becoming human, even of becoming perversely human, not involve a response (even if this is rage) to the sense of loss when language seems to fail? Wittgenstein's example of my pain inhabiting your body seems to me to suggest either the institution that the representation of shared pain exists in imagination but is not experienced, in which case one would say that language is hooked rather inadequately to the world of pain. Or, alternately, that the experience of pain cries out for this response of the possibility that my pain could reside in your body and that the philosophical grammar of pain is an answer to that call.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

II

The second scene is from Rabindranath Tagore. A prefiguration of the investment of sexuality into the project of nationalism is found in three important novels—*Gora*, *Ghore Baire*, and *Char Adhyaya*. Here I want to simply draw out certain passages from *Ghore Baire* (Home and the World)—a novel that is set in the context of the *Swadeshi* movement against the British Raj. The struggle is to free the self that has become frozen in language. It is this frozen self that reads itself as if it were a script. It produces a magnification of the images of both nation and sexuality, and in Tagore's reading it is the pursuit of such magnified images that can make one blind towards the unique concreteness of being and hence to the experience of suffering.

The story of *Ghore Baire* is well known. The narrative device is to relate the story through interspersed accounts of the three main characters: Nikhil, the local *zamindar* who is bound to his *praja* (subjects who include both Hindus and Muslims) by ties of patronage and love; his wife Bimala whose desire moves from Nikhil to Sandip and then returns to Nikhil; and his friend Sandip, the fiery nationalist revolutionary. I shall reproduce only some root metaphors from each character.

Bimala

When inspired by Sandip's passionate speech in favor of the *Swadeshi* movement, which she has heard with other women from behind the curtains, Bimala tells her husband that she wishes to serve food to Sandip with her own hands (i.e., not through the mediation of a servant). Serving food by a woman to a man can be a very sensuous gesture, hovering between the maternal and the sexual in Bengali imagery. This is the first time Bimala will enter any male presence except that of her husband, for according to convention, women of the feudal household do not step outside the women's arena.

> I shall speak the truth. That day I felt—why has not God made me unbelievably beautiful. . . .Today as this great day dawns, let the men of the nation see in its women—the form of the goddess Jagaddhatri (the one who holds the earth). . . .Will Sandip be able to see that awakened power of the country in me? Or will he think that

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> I am an ordinary woman, merely the wife who lives in his friend's house?

Sandip

The magnification of her image in Sandip's eyes that Bimala desires will find an answering chord. But before I describe that, it is important to ask how Sandip constructs himself. The opening line, when the reader first hears the voice of Sandip, is enlightening:

> When I read my own account, I reflect, is that Sandip? Am I simply constructed in language? Am I just a book constructed of flesh and blood?

And then responding to the desire for the magnification of the image of Bimala that would merge with the image of the nation—a desire, however, which is read as a need—Sandip continues:

> Unless they can behold the nation with their own eyes, our people will not awaken. The nation needs the icon of a goddess. . . .It will not do if *we* construct the icon. It is the icons that have been transmitted by tradition that will have to be transformed into the icons of our nation. The path of worship is deeply transcribed in our country—traversing that path we shall have to direct the devotional stream towards the nation.
>
> When I saw Bimala, I said *that* god(dess) for whose worship I have come to the earth after a hundred thousand *yugas*, till s(he) revealed her form to me, till then could I have believed in her with all my body and soul? If I had not been able to behold you, then I could not have seen the whole country as one, this I have told you many times. I do not know if you understand this. It is very difficult to explain that the gods in their heaven remain invisible, only in the world of death do they show themselves.

And as reported speech in Bimala's story:

> Sandip got up and said, man reaches such a state when the whole world comes to be concentrated in one small place.[13] Here in your salon I have seen my world revealed. . . .I worship you. . . .After seeing you my *mantra* (sacred formula) has changed. Not *vande matram* (I worship the nation as mother) but *vande priyam* (I worship the nation as beloved), *vande mohinim* (I worship the nation as the enticing one). The mother protects us. . .the beloved destroys us. Beautiful is that destruction. You hear the tinkling of the bells of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that dance of death. This delicate, luminous, fruit bearing, the one cooled by the Malay mountains[14]—this earth of Bengal—you have altered its image in the eyes of your devotee in the fraction of a second [lit. in the blinking of an eye]. You, oh Mohini (the enticing one, a female form that god Vishnu took to entice the demons to drink poison)—you have come with your vessel of poison—I shall either die after drinking this poison or shall become the one who has conquered death.

Nikhil

In an argument with Sandip:

> I am willing to serve my country but not to worship it. To offer worship to anyone else except that which should be worshipped is to destroy it.

In an argument with Sandip on the nation as an icon (as reported speech in Sandip's voice):

> But all this is very difficult to explain to Nikhil. Truth is now like a prejudice in his mind. As if there is a special substance called truth. I have said to him often that where falsity is truth there falsehood *alone* is truth. That falsehood shall be superior to truth. Those who can think of the icon of the nation as a truth, that icon will do the work of truth. We as a people cannot visualize the idea of a nation with ease but we can see the icon as the nation easily. When all this is well known then those who want to accomplish the project of nationalism, will have to work with this understanding.
>
> Nikhil suddenly got very agitated and said, you have lost the power to serve the truth, therefore you want a sacred formula to drop from the skies. This is why when for hundreds of years the work of the nation has remained undone, you now want to make the nation into a god so that you can stretch your palms in supplication and receive a blessing as if by magic.

And finally in accepting his defeat in that his wife and beloved Bimala saw him as a diminished human being in comparison to Sandip, but refusing to accept this as the extinguishing of the self:

> Today I shall have to see myself and Bimala completely from the outside. I am greedy. I wanted to enjoy that Tilottama (a mythic woman created by the gods so that every particle of her being was perfect) as my mental creation. The Bimala who had an external

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

existence had become a pretext for that. But Bimala is what she is—she does not have to become Tilottama for me—there is no reason for that.

Today I have understood this clearly—I am just a contingency in Bimala's life. That person with whom Bimala's whole being can merge, that person is Sandip. But it would be a great lie if I were to say that it means I am nothing for my manhood was not simply a means to capture the women of the interior.

An Interlude

The movements that run through these three voices may be brought together at this moment for a tentative weaving together. Each of the two men have found their destruction in Bimala, but in different ways. Sandip began his account by voicing the idea that he was just a script—someone who had no existence outside of language. In the only moment of authenticity that is permitted to him, which comes when Bimala has turned away from him, she responds to a passionate plea by saying "Sandip Babu, have you got several speeches written in your exercise book—so you can produce an appropriate one for each occasion?" Sandip's own fear is finally confirmed in the reflection in Bimala's speech—he exists only in language. His words do not falsify an inner life or draw a veil over it—they are indeed functioning to hide the fact that there is no inner life to hide. His search for the nation is a search for an icon, his desire for the other is for a magnification of image in which the lack of individual self may be hidden by a collectivization of desire. I would have been tempted to draw an analogy with the idea of certain kinds of ghosts in folklore, whose identities are revealed in a mirror by the fact that they cast no reflection. But Rabindranath himself, who appears in the voice of a schoolmaster, compares him to the new moon (*amavasyar chand*)—simply an absence.

As distinctions dissolve and the nation becomes a magnified image of beloved worshipped in the abstract, it becomes possible to inflict all kinds of violence on all those who resist this or who create counter images, equally enlarged. The desire for icons allows the nation as an absent object to be made magically visible through an investment in this magnified sexuality. The potential for violence is written in this construction. The story ends with a

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

communal carnage that the reader does not gaze at directly but that is happening outside the immediate frame, waiting as it were, as the double of the nationalist ideology that has been propounded.

Nikhil may seem to have won since Bimala returns to him. But in their last exchange of intimacies, Bimala falls on his feet and begs him to let her worship him. Is this traditional slippage between husband and god not what he has tried to resist in their relationship all along? He does not try to stop her from this disastrous identification any more: "Who am I to stop her—after all it is not I who am the recipient of this worship." Nikhil's defeat is the realization that the everyday life embodied in tradition lives as much in the worship of icons (the husband as god) as the new transformations that Sandip is trying to bring (nation as god). We see Nikhil riding away from us into the heart of the carnage, offering himself either as a sacrificial victim or as a martyr (but never being named as such)—the very magnification of the image of nation and the investment of sexual desire in it has made it into a monster. We only know, as the voice of the schoolteacher tells us, that it will not do for him not to go there, for what is being done to the women is unspeakable. Towards the end he is brought back, injured, in a carriage. The news, says the person who has rescued him, is not good. We do not know if he will live or die.

Tagore does not permit himself a closure. Nikhil is the truth seeker who can find comfort neither in the psychological clichés of tradition (husband is god), nor of modernity (nation is god). He sees the potential of violence in both. Tradition is what diminishes women and permits a subtle everyday violence to be perpetrated upon them. Thus, when Bimala once comments that women's hearts are ungenerous, small, Nikhil replies, "yes, like the feet of Chinese women that are tied and never allowed to grow." In the modern project of building a nation the image is not diminished, but enlarged. Its dramatization means that bodies of women are violently appropriated for the cause as nationalism gives birth to its double—communalism. If one deified women so that the nation could be imagined as the beloved, the other makes visible the dark side of this project by making the bodies of women the surfaces on which their text of the nation is written.[15]

Body and language both function here as simulacrums in which collective desire and collective death meet. Nikhil, the truth seeker,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

prefigures the image of the martyr who must offer himself in an unheroic mode so that the magnified images of gods and demons have a chance to be humanized again. I think this is the task Tagore sets his reader—to hear the unfinished nature of this story, the transformations of the projects of tradition and modernity.

III

The third phantasm I want to evoke is from a story by Sadat Hassan Manto entitled "Khol Do," which I first analyzed in 1986.[16] The setting is the Partition of India and the riots, though we never gaze at the violence directly. An aged father and his daughter take a journey from one side of the border to the other. On reaching his destination, the father cannot find his daughter. He goes berserk searching for her. He comes across some young men who are acting as volunteers to help trace lost relatives. He tells them about his daughter and urges them to find her. They promise to help.

The young men find Sakina, the daughter, hiding in a forest half crazed with fear. They reassure her by telling her how they had met her father. She climbs into the jeep with them. One of them, seeing how embarrassed she is because she does not have her *duppata* (veil), gives her his jacket so that she can cover her breasts.

We next see a clinic. A near dead body is being brought on a stretcher. The father, Sarajjudin, recognizes the corpse. It is his daughter. Numbly he follows the stretcher to the doctor's chamber. Reacting to the stifling heat in the room, the doctor points to the window and says *"khol do"* ("open it").

There is a movement in the dead body. The hands move towards the tape of the *salwar* (trouser) and fumble to unloosen (lit. open) it. Old Sarajjudin shouts in joy "my daughter is alive—my daughter is alive." The doctor is drenched in sweat.

As I understood this story in 1986, I saw Sakina condemned to a living death. The normality of language has been destroyed, as Sakina can hear words conveying only the "other" command. Such a fractured relation to language has been documented for many survivors of prolonged violence, for whom it is the ordinariness of language that divides them from the rest of the world. I noted that even Sakina's father cannot comprehend the non-world

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

into which she has been plunged, for he mistakes the movement in the body as a sign of life whereas in truth it is the sign of her living death. Only the doctor as the off-the-center character in the story can register the true horror.

On deeper meditation, I think there is one last movement that I did not then comprehend. In giving the shout of joy and saying "my daughter is alive," the father does not speak here in personalized voices of tradition. In the societal context of this period, when ideas of purity and honor densely populated the literary narratives, as well as family and political narratives, so that fathers willed their daughters to die for family honor rather than live with bodies that had been violated by other men, *this father wills his daughter to live even as parts of her body can do nothing else but proclaim her brutal violation.*

In the terms set by the example from *The Blue and Brown Books,* one may ask if the pain of the female body so violated can live in a male body. One can read in Manto a transaction between death and life, body and speech, in the figures of the daughter and the father. In the speech of the father, at least, the daughter is alive, and though she may find an existence only in his utterance, he creates through his utterance a home for her mutilated and violated self. Compare this with hundreds of accounts purporting to be based on direct experience in which the archetypal motif was of a girl finding her way to her parents' home after having been subjected to rape and plunder, and being told, "why are you here—it would have been better if you were dead." As I have argued elsewhere, such rejections may not have occurred as often as they were alleged to have happened in narratives. But the widespread belief in such narrative truths of sacrificing the daughter to maintain the unsullied purity and honor of the family attests to the power of this myth. To be masculine when death was all around was to be able to hand death to your violated daughter without flinching—to obliterate any desire for the concreteness and uniqueness of this human being who once played in your family yard.[17] In the background of such stories, a single sentence of joy uttered by old Sarajjudin transforms the meaning of being a father.

In Tagore's reading of Sandip, he was capable of constituting himself as a linguistic cliché. In Manto, the sentence, "my daugh-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ter is alive," is like Wittgenstein's, "I am in pain." Although it has the formal appearance of an indicative statement, it is to beseech the daughter to find a way to live in the speech of the father. And it happens not at the moment when her dishonor is hidden from the eyes of the world but at the moment when her body proclaims it. This sentence is the beginning of a relationship, not its end.

At this moment I want to present the glimpse of a later argument. I have written elsewhere that in the gendered division of labor in the work of mourning, it is the task of men to ritually create a body for the dead person and to find a place in the cosmos for the dead. This task, which is always a very difficult one for the mourner, may even become repulsive, as when members of the Aghori sect, who live on cremation grounds, state that in the cases when someone has died an unnatural or violent death, they have to consume parts of the dead body so as to free the dead person from living the fate of a homeless ghost. I wonder if Sarajjudin performed this terrifying task of accepting the tortured relationship with the daughter whom other fathers may have simply cast away as socially dead. And instead of the simplified images of healing that assume that reliving a trauma or decathecting desire from the lost object and reinvesting it elsewhere, we need to think of healing as a kind of relationship with death.

IV

Nadia Seremetakis has recently used the idea of the ethics of antiphony to describe the structure of Greek mourning rituals. She shows how the interaction between acoustic, linguistic, and corporeal orientations gives a public definition to a "good death" and distinguishes it from a "bad death": "The acoustics of death embodied in 'screaming' and lamenting and the presence or 'appearance' (*fanerosi)* of kin construct the 'good death.' The silent death is the asocial 'bad death' without kin support. Silence here connotes the absence of witness."[18] Thus, it is the special role of women to "witness" death and to convert silence into speech.[19] In the rendering of this issue by Seremetakis, death is always seen as physical death. What happens to the work of mourning when women have been abducted, raped, and condemned to a social death? The classic ritualistic solution in this case is for the social

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

body to cut itself completely off from the polluted individual. This is objectified and made present by the performance of symbolic mourning for the "dead" person, by such ritualistic devices as the breaking of a pot that comes to stand for the person who has socially died but is physically alive. This is the sentiment underlying the stories I described earlier of kinsmen refusing to accept women who had been abducted or violated; or of men construing their kinship obligations in terms of the obligation to kill a beloved sister or wife rather than let her fall into the hands of men of the other community. Such women who were violated and rejected may be said to be occupying a zone between two deaths, rather than between life and death. Let us take a step backwards towards mourning in everyday life as it occurs in the case of "normal" deaths and ask whether it was possible to deploy the cultural codes to represent the kind of social death that I have described. It does not seem an easy matter to transform these "bad deaths" into "good deaths."

In an earlier paper, I described the division of labor between women and men, between professional mourners and close relatives, and between kin and affines in giving structure to the work of mourning in Punjabi families.[20] It is through the ritual work performed by the professional mourners (usually women of the Barber caste who have very specialized roles in the death rituals) that grief was objectified in the form of a portrait. We can glean from descriptions given in several accounts that women would form a circle around the dead body and move in circular forms, all the time beating their breasts and inflicting injuries upon their own bodies. In the frenzy of this "grief" they would tear at their clothes and their hair, improvising various mourning laments to make the loss that has occurred public and utterable. They would give the lead in the mourning laments to the women who were closely related to the dead person. The laments would articulate what the loss has meant for each person, now bereaved. The address was to the dead person, to the living, and to their own bodies, as well as to the gods. I give a brief example of each kind of address:

> (To the dead son)—Open your eyes just once my beloved jewel (*mere lal*)—you have never stalled any request I made of you.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

(To the men who are going to take the dead body of her husband to the cremation ground)—Do not let the fire touch him—I fold my hands before you—he could never bear the heat.

(To one's own body)—Are you made of stone that you do not break when you see this calamity?

(To the family goddess, referring to the fact that the goddess is a virgin—address is by the mother of a dead son)—You call yourself a goddess—you were just jealous of the good fortune of my *bahu*—son's wife—you had to make her a widow because you have yourself never found a husband—you call yourself a goddess—you are a demoness.

I could give extensive examples of blasphemy in the laments, on how women rage against the idea that gods are *just* beings, rather than callous, small-minded beings who play with the happiness of mortals. They rage against their bodies that have to bear pain within, rather than just disintegrate in the face of such tragedy. But since the mourning laments also have a dialogical element, soon other women begin to punctuate this by the counsel to get on with the work of living and by assurances to the most deeply affected mourners that the support of the community is with them. It is not that grief is seen as something that shall pass. Indeed, the representation of grief is that it is metonymically experienced as bodily pain and the female body as one that will carry this pain within forever. A mimesis is certainly established between body and language but it is through the work of the collectivity that this happens rather than at the level of individual symptom. A mourning lament from rural Greece recorded by Loring Danforth bears the same grammar as the mourning laments in Punjabi families:[21]

My child, where can I put the *ponos* I feel for you?
If I toss it by the road side, those who pass will take it.
If I throw it in a tree, the little birds will take it.
I will take it in my heart so that it will take root there
So that it will cause me *ponos* while I walk.
So that it will kill me as I stand.

So, in a sense, it is the objectification of grief on the body taken both as surface and as depth, as well as in language, that bears witness to the loss that death has inflicted. According to Seremakis,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

it is this witnessing that can make the performance of death public and even convert a bad death into a good death. In my own experience, the question of how good death and bad death is to be defined by the act of witnessing is a more complicated one, and I shall return to it later.

The excess of speech in the mourning laments and the theatrical infliction of harm on the body by the women stands in stark contrast to the behavior of men. In the course of everyday life men dominate the public domain in terms of the control over speech, but in the case of death they become mute. While the corpse is in the house, all the preparations, including the bathing and dressing of the dead body, are performed by the women. Women cling to the corpse imploring the dead person not to leave them. It is the men who have to disengage the dead body from the weeping and wailing women, to carry it on their shoulders to the cremation *ghats,* and to give the sacred fire to the dead person. It is they who gather the bones on the fourth day and perform the ritual of immersing these into the sacred river. For a period ranging from ten to thirteen days, the dead person hovers between the living and the dead in the form of a ghost, and it is through the gift of a body ritually created for him or her by the chief mourner (usually the husband or son) that the ghost finally becomes an ancestor. Thus, if women perform the task of bearing witness to the grief and the loss that death has inflicted (otherwise people will say was it a dog or cat that died, one woman told me), it is men who must ritually create all the conditions so that the dead can find a home.[22]

But if the good death is defined by the bearing of witness on the part of women so that grief can move between the body and speech that can be publicly articulated, as well as the performance of rituals for the dead so that they do not have to wander in the world of the living as ghosts, how is bad death to be represented?

In a sense, every death, except that of a very old person, introduces disorder in personal and social life. But in the flow of everyday life this is understood to be caused by events beyond the control of the living community. Indeed, one of the underlying tensions of mourning rituals is to absolve the living of responsibility for the death that has occurred. A common refrain in mourning laments is to say that the ostensible cause of the death (for instance a particular disease) is only the pretext for death to do its ap-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

pointed job. Of course, when death is seen to be caused by the willful action of others, then a great tension prevails as to what definition of the situation will come to prevail through the control of mourning laments.

All this is reversed when the normal flow of life is seen as disrupted by the violence of men. In that case women bear witness to this disorder by a new construction of speech and silence. A woman recalled to me a mourning lament that witnessed the defeat of the Sikhs at the hands of the British troops in the Anglo Sikh wars:

> The crowns on the heads of the young wives—
> The flowing laps of the mothers—
> The swagger of sisters protected by brothers—
> Wiped out in a moment—
> Oh, from seven seas across came the white man to fight.

She went on to say that although everything was wiped out it was possible for the women to wail since their men had died heroically in war. The men had died as husbands, sons, and brothers. But in the case of all that died in the Partition, there was nothing but silence—for the men who inflicted such violence on women were not only strange men but also men known and deeply loved.[23] It is to an elaboration of this statement that the next section is devoted. It is an amplification that I have constructed—for it was never possible for me to get an exegesis of such statements from the women themselves.

V

In the literary imagination in India, the violence of the Partition was about inscribing desire on the bodies of women in a manner that we have not yet understood. In the mythic imagination in India, victory or defeat in war was ultimately inscribed on the bodies of women. The texts on the *vilap* (mourning laments of Gandhari in the *Mahabharata* or of Mandodari in the *Ramayana,* all whose kin were slain in the epic battles) are literary classics. This is a metaphoric transformation of the role of witnessing death in everyday life. Yet, the violence of the Partition was unique in the metamorphosis it achieved between the idea of appropriating

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

a territory as nation and appropriating the body of the women as territory. As we saw earlier, a prefiguration of this is found in Tagore's rendering of the idea of the magnification of the image of nation, which draws its energy from the image of magnified sexuality. However, this image of sexuality and its intimate connection with the project of nationalism has not only a genealogy in the Indian imagination, but it was also an important narrative trope in the representation of the violation of the project of the Empire. The image of the innocent white woman who was brutally raped by the barbaric sepoys was an important narrative trope for establishing the barbaric character of the natives in 1857, when the first large-scale rebellion against the British took place. Jenny Sharpe has analyzed the image of helpless women and children being cut to pieces by leering sepoys as establishing the "truth" of the "mutiny."[24] As she says, "Commissioners and magistrates entrusted with investigating the rumors could find no evidence of systematic rape, mutilation and torture at Cawnpore or anyplace else. The official reports, however, came too late, as the sensational stories had already done their work. Rebels were seen as sadistic fiends, and Nana Sahib was especially vilified for the unforgivable crime of desecrating English womanhood. Barr exhibits a predictable understanding of the Cawnpore massacre when she writes that 'one of the most revered of Victorian institutions, the English lady, was slaughtered, defiled and brought low.' When the massacre of women is reported as the destruction of an institution, we know that the sacred image of English womanhood has outlived the story of women's lives."[25]

Thus, we have the interweaving of two strands. First, the idea that women must bear witness to death, which is found in the classical Indian literature and the everyday life, gets transformed into the notion that the woman's body must be made to bear the signs of its possession by the enemy. The second strand seems to come from a narrative trope established at the time of the mutiny that equates the violation of the nation with the violation of its women. It is not clear whether during the riots nationalist slogans were physically imprinted on women, although the most horrific stories about such violations are commonly believed.[26] What is clear is that at least one hundred thousand women from both sides of the border were forcibly abducted and raped. The figures given

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in the Legislative Assembly during the Constituent Assembly debates in 1949 confirm this. It also affirmed that processions of women who were stripped naked were organized with the accompaniment of jeering crowds in cities like Amritsar and Lahore.[27] Family narratives abound on men who were compelled to kill their women to save their honor. Such sacrificial deaths are beatified in family narratives, while women who were recovered from their abductors and returned to their families or who converted to the other religion and made new lives in the homes of their abductors hardly ever find a place in these narratives, although they occur frequently in the literary representations.

When women's bodies were made the passive witnesses of the disorder of the Partition in this manner, how did women mourn the loss of self and the world? It is in considering this question that we find startling reversals in the transactions between body and language. In the normal process of mourning, grievous harm is inflicted by women on their own bodies, while the acoustic and linguistic codes make the loss public by the mourning laments. When asking women to narrate their experiences of the Partition I found a zone of silence around the event. This silence was achieved either by the use of language that was general and metaphoric but that evaded specific description of any events so as to capture the particularity of their experience, or by describing the surrounding events but leaving the actual experience of abduction and rape unstated. It was common to describe the violence of the Partition in such terms as rivers of blood flowing and the earth covered with white shrouds right unto the horizon. Sometimes a woman would remember images of fleeing, but as one woman warned me, it was dangerous to remember. These memories were sometimes compared to poison that makes the inside of the woman dissolve, as a solid is dissolved in a powerful liquid (*andar hi andar ghul ja rahi hai*). At other times a woman would say that she is like a discarded exercise book in which the accounts of past relationships were kept—the body, a parchment of losses. At any rate, none of the metaphors used to describe the self that had become the repository of poisonous knowledge emphasized the need to give expression to this hidden knowledge.

This code of silence protected women who had been brought back to their families through the efforts of the military evacuation

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

authorities after they were recovered from the homes of their abductors, or who had been married by stretching norms of kinship and affinity since the violation of their bodies was never made public. Rather than bearing witness to the disorder that they had been subjected to, the metaphor that they used was of a woman drinking the poison and keeping it within her: "Just as a woman's body is made so that she can hide the faults of her husband deep within her, so she can drink all pain—take the stance of silence." And as one woman told Ritu Menon and Kamla Bhasin (cited earlier), "what is a woman—she is always used?" Or, as was told to me, "what is there to be proud in a woman's body—everyday it is polluted by being consumed." The sliding of the representations of the female body between everyday life into the body that had become the container of the poisonous knowledge of the events of the Partition perhaps helped women to assimilate their experiences into their everyday lives.

Just as the relation between speech and silence is reversed in the act of witnessing here, so is the relation between the surface and depth of the body. In the fantasy of men, the inscription of nationalist slogans on the bodies of women (Victory to India, Long live Pakistan), or proclaiming possession of their bodies (This thing, this loot—*ye mal*—is ours), would create a future memory by which men of the other community would never be able to forget that the women as territory had already been claimed and occupied by other men. The bodies of the women were surfaces on which texts were to be written and read—icons of the new nations. But women converted this passivity into agency by using metaphors of pregnancy—hiding pain, giving it a home just as a child is given a home in the woman's body. Kriesteva's description of pregnancy—it happens but I am not there—may also be used to describe such violence. But the subsequent act of remembering only through the body makes the woman's own experience displace being from the surface to the depth of the body. The only difference is that unlike the child, which the woman will be able to offer to the husband, this holding of the pain inside must never be allowed to be born. This movement from surface to depth also transforms passivity into agency.

It was again Sadat Hasan Manto who was able to give literary expression to this. In his story *Fundanen* (Pompoms), a woman is

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

sitting in front of a mirror. Her speech is completely incoherent, but like many strings of nonsense used in rhymes or musical compositions, its phonetic properties are like theatrical or musical representations. Interspersed between the strings of nonsense syllables are meaningful sentences with precise information such as the bus number that brought her from one side of the border to the other. The woman is drawing grotesque designs on her body, registering these only in the mirror. She says she is designing a body that is appropriate for the time, for in those days, she says, women had to grow two stomachs—one was the normal one and the second was for them to be able to bear the fruits of violence within themselves. The distortion of speech and the distortion of body seems to make deep sense. The language of pain could only be a kind of hysteria—the surface of the body becomes a carnival of images and the depth becomes the site for hysterical pregnancies—the language having all the phonetic excess of hysteria that destroys apparent meanings. When Tagore's Bimala said that she wondered if Sandip could see the power of the nation in her, she seems to have prefigured Manto's women in whom one could see the completion of that project of making the nation visible by a surrealist juxtaposition of images.

So, if men emerged from colonial subjugation as autonomous citizens of an independent nation, then they emerged simultaneously as monsters. What kind of death rituals could have been performed for these wandering ghosts to be given a place in the cosmos? We have to again turn to the register of the imaginary. Intizar Hussain described this in his story "The City of Sorrow," in which three nameless men are having a conversation. The story opens with the first man saying, "I have nothing to say. I am dead." The story then moves in the form of a dialogue on the manner of his dying. One of his companions asks how he actually died. Did he die when he forced a man on the point of his sword to strip his sister naked? No, he remained alive. Then perhaps when he saw the same man forcing another old man to strip his wife naked? No, he remained alive. Then, when he was himself forced to strip his own sister naked? Then too he remained alive. It was only when his father gazed at his face and died that he heard in his wife's voice the question, "don't you know it is you who are

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

dead?" and he realized that he had died. But he was condemned to carry his own corpse with him wherever he went.

It appears to me that just as women drank the pain so that life could continue, so men longed for an unheroic martyrdom by which they could invite the evil back upon themselves and humanize the enormous looming images of nation and sexuality. But it was not through the political discourse that this was achieved. The debates in the Constituent Assembly on the issue of abducted women were full of the imagery of restoring national honor by recovering the women who had been abducted from the other side and returning "their" women back to the Muslims. Mahatma Gandhi, writing about the exchange of women and the exchange of prisoners on the same page of his Delhi diary, said that it had pained him to learn that many Hindu men were reluctant to return the Muslim women. He urged them to do so as a form of repentance. Jawaharlal Nehru urged Hindu men to accept the women who were recovered and to not punish them for the sins of their abductors. In this entire discourse of exchange of women from both sides, it was assumed that once the nation had claimed back its women, its honor would have been restored. It was as if you could wipe the slate clean and leave the horrendous events behind.

VI

It was on the register of the imaginary that the question of what could constitute the passion of those who occupied this unspeakable and unhearable zone was given shape. The zone between the two deaths that the women had to occupy did not permit of any speech, for what "right" words could be spoken against the wrong that had been done them. Hence, Manto's Sakina can only proclaim the terrible truth of this society by a mute repetition—*murde main kuch jumbish hui* (there was a movement in the corpse). The task of mourning for the men was to hear this silence, to mold it by their presence. Hence the joyful cry of the father that his daughter was alive. This being alive in the zone of the two deaths, and this witnessing of the truth of the women's violation, is how mourning in this zone could be defined. Here the issue is not that of an Antigone, mourning for her dead brother in defiance of the law of Creon, proclaiming that the register of someone who has

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

been named must be preserved, as Lacan makes us witness it in his interpretation of Antigone's famous passage that she would not have died for a husband or a child but that this concerned her brother, born of the same father and the same mother (the product of criminal desire and criminal knowledge).[28] Here it is the issue of the women drinking poisonous knowledge and men molding the silences of the women with their words. Truth does not need here the envelope of beauty as Lacan would have it, but rather a renouncing of it as Tagore's Nikhil came to state it.

It is often considered the task of historiography to break the silences that announce the zones of taboo. There is even something heroic in the image of empowering women to speak and to give voice to the voiceless. I have myself found this a very complicated task, for when we use such imagery as breaking the silence, we may end by using our capacity to "unearth" hidden facts as a weapon. Even the idea that we should recover the narratives of violence becomes problematic when we realize that such narratives cannot be told unless we see the relation between pain and language that a culture has evolved. I have found it important to think of the division of labor between men and women in the work of mourning as a model on which the further work of transforming could be done in thinking about the relation between pain, language, and the body. Following Wittgenstein, this manner of conceptualizing the puzzle of pain frees us from thinking that statements about pain are in the nature of questions about certainty or doubt over our own pain or that of others. Instead, we begin to think of pain as asking for acknowledgment and recognition; denial of the other's pain is not about the failings of the intellect but the failings of the spirit. In the register of the imaginary, the pain of the other not only asks for a home in language but also seeks a home in the body.

It is not that there is a seamless continuity between the distant shore and the everyday shore, between the registers of the imaginary and the real, but one can only understand the subtle transformations that go on as we move from one shore to the other, if one keeps in mind the complex relation between speaking and hearing, between building a world that the living can inhabit with their loss and building a world in which the dead can find a home. It worries me that I have been unable to name that which died when autono-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

mous citizens of India were simultaneously born as monsters. But then I have to remind myself and others that those who tried to name it, such as Manto, themselves touched madness and died in fierce regret for the loss of the radical dream of transforming India, while those who found speech easily, as in the political debates on abducted women in the Constituent Assembly, continue to talk about national honor when dealing with the violence that women have had to endure in every communal riot since the Partition.

ENDNOTES

[1]In thinking through some of the issues raised in this paper, I was greatly helped by an idyllic three day retreat at Kasauli. I thank Geeta Kapur and Vivan Sundaram for their warm hospitality and the marvelous conversations. Kumar Shahani helped with some of the most difficult passages for which I offer my gratitude. Without Sanmay, though, I would never have had the courage to write.

[2]G. D. Khosla, *Stern Reckoning* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1989; first published in 1951), 3.

[3]Veena Das, "Composition of the Personal Voice: Violence and Migration," *Studies in History* 7 (1) (1991): 65–77; and Veena Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1995).

[4]Stanley Cavell, *Philosophical Passages: Wittgenstein, Emerson, Austin, Derrida* (Oxford: Basil Blackwell, 1995).

[5]See especially Veena Das and Ashis Nandy, "Violence, Victimhood and the Language of Silence," in *The Word and the World: Fantasy, Symbol and Record* (Delhi: Sage Publications, 1986); Das, "Composition of the Personal Voice"; and Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India.*

[6]See Stanley Cavell, *A Pitch of Philosophy: Autobiographical Exercises* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1994) and Stanley Cavell, "Philosophy and Modernity: The Case of Wittgenstein's *Philosophical Investigations,*" paper presented to the seminar on Modernity Reconsidered at the Swedish Collegium of Advanced Study in the Social Sciences, 26–29 April 1994. Cavell, elsewhere, describes the later thought of Wittgenstein as ". . .providing a theory of the drive to metaphysics and the possibility and necessity of skepticism—as much a philosophy of metaphysics as it is a philosophy of the ordinary." Cavell, *Philosophical Passages: Wittgenstein, Emerson, Austin, Derrida,* 78.

[7]In the felicitous expression of Robert R. Desjerlais, *Body and Emotion* (Philadelphia, Pa.: University of Pennsylvania Press, 1992), grief is transformed into pain that clings to the body.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[8]I have to refer back to the haunting images that Khwja Ahmad Abbas, the Urdu writer, used to refer to the atrocities on women. "Did the English whisper in our ears that you may chop off the head of whichever Hindu you find, or that you must plunge a knife in the stomach of whichever Muslim you find? Did the English also educate us into the art of committing atrocities with women of other religions right in the marketplace? Did they teach us to tattoo Pakistan and Jai Hind on the breasts and secret organs of women?" Khwja Ahmed Abbas, "Prastavna," in Ramananda Sagar, *Aur insan mar gaya* (Delhi: Rakjamal Prakashan, 1977, in Hindi). See also Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India,* 184.

[9]Lawrence Langer, *Holocaust Testimonies: The Ruins of Memory* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1991).

[10]C. Castoriadis, *The Imaginary Institution of Society* (Cambridge: Polity Press, 1987).

[11]On the concept of pawning of voice, see Cavell, *A Pitch of Philosophy.*

[12]Ludwig Wittgenstein, *The Blue and Brown Books* (London: Basil Blackwell, 1958).

[13]If Sandip sounds like a textbook, this is precisely what is intended. This point was completely missed by the many critics of Tagore.

[14]All these adjectives describe the goddess and were given a different life by Bankimchandra to describe the nation.

[15]It would be obvious that my interpretation of this text differs considerably from the interpretation offered by Ashis Nandy, *The Illegitimacy of Nationalism* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1994), who argues that Tagore's women stand for an authentic, unencumbered relation to tradition and hence are the defense which the culture puts up in response to both colonialism and an illegitimate nationalism that is modeled on the colonial image. Clearly Tagore has a more complex relation to tradition as evident in Nikhil's sense of defeat when Bimala insists on offering him her worship. Similarly, I cannot agree with Partha Chatterji, *Nationalism: A Derivative Discourse?* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1990), that Tagore's nationalism is simply a derived discourse.

[16]This story is included in an anthology of stories on the Partition translated by Alok Bhalla, ed., *Stories about the Partition of India,* vols. I, II, III (Delhi: Indus Publications, 1994), but there are many problems with the translation as I have pointed out elsewhere. See Veena Das, *Review of Stories about the Partition of India,* vols. I, II, and III, ed. Alok Bhalla (Delhi: Indus Publications, 1994).

[17]Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India.* See my account of the narration by a man on how he had felt compelled to kill his favorite sister because the other modes of dying were too painful for her.

[18]Nadia C. Seremetakis, *The Last Word: Women, Death and Divination in Inner Mani* (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1991), 101.

[19]See also Charles L. Briggs, "Personal Sentiments and Polyphonic Voices in Warao Women's Ritual Wailing: Music and Poetics in a Collective Discourse," *American Anthropologist* 95 (4) (1993): 929–57.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[20]Veena Das, "The Work of Mourning: Death in a Punjabi Family," in Merry I. White and Susan Pollock, eds., *The Cultural Transition: Human Experience and Social Transformation in the Third World* (London: Routledge, 1986), 179–210.

[21]Loring Danforth, *The Death Rituals of Rural Greece* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1982). This is not to suggest any underlying similarity between the theoretical frames used by Danforth and Seremetakis. See also Margaret Allexiou, "Reappropriating Greek Sacrifice," *Journal of Modern Greek Studies* 8 (1990): 97–123.

[22]For a detailed discussion of the structure of these rituals and the manner in which caste and kinship categories are utilized, see Veena Das, *Structure and Cognition: Aspects of Hindu Caste and Ritual* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1977), chap. 5.

[23]Das, "Composition of the Personal Voice."

[24]Jenny Sharpe, *Allegories of Empire: The Figure of Woman in the Colonial Text* (Minneapolis, Minn.: University of Minnesota Press, 1993).

[25]Ibid., 64.

[26]Abbas, "Prastavna"; and Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India.*

[27]Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India;* Uruashi Butalia, "Community, State and Gender: On Women's Agency during Partition," *Economic and Political Weekly* 17 (1993): WS12–WS24; Ritu Menon and Kamla Bhasin, "Surviving Violence: Some Reflections on Women's Experience of Partition," paper presented at IV Conference of the Indian Association of Women Studies, 1990; and Ritu Menon and Kamla Bhasin, "Recovery, Rupture, Resistance. Indian State and Abduction of Women during Partition," *Economic and Political Weekly* 17 (1993): WS2–WS12.

[28]J. Lacan, "The Essence of Tragedy," in J. A. Miller, ed., *The Seminar of Jacques Lacan, Book VII,* trans. Dennis Porter (London: Norton & Co, 1992).

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Cosmologies of the powerless hold the capriciousness of gods and the sheer contingency of events responsible for the disorder of their lives; this, at the very least, has the potential of freeing those who suffer from having to take personal responsibility for their fate. . . .But in the cosmologies of the powerful, conversely, there is no place for chaos. For, if the contingent and chaotic nature of the world were acknowledged in these, it would have the potential to dismantle the structures of legitimacy through which suffering is imposed on the powerless. Clothed in the language of responsibility, the discourse of power ends up with the equation that pain is equal to punishment and that the injustice of life, testified to by suffering, can only be redeemed by further suffering.

Veena Das

From *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India*

Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1995

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Stanley Cavell

Comments on Veena Das's Essay "Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain"

THIS ESSAY LEAVES ME WITH A SENSE not only of achieved depth but of inexhaustible tact, of simplicity and attention in the face of unencompassable devastations of spirit. With no thought of doing it justice, I will trace a line or two of Veena Das's more elusive thoughts, which readers of her essay may be having some difficulty with.

The first sentence of her essay ends by confessing that she finds that the languages of pain "often elude me." In what follows I will be guided by the thought that to understand her perplexity is the surest route to understanding her readers' perplexity.

Veena Das's topic is pain, in a historical instance in which its "enormity. . .is not in question." Her problem presents itself to her as the lack of "languages of pain through which social sciences could gaze at, touch or become textual bodies on which this pain is written." This opening sentence fairly obviously enacts, in its open tolerance of obscurity, the absence of such standing or given languages for such pain. If the scientific intellect is silent on the issue, she who speaks scientifically—committed to making herself intelligible to others similarly committed—is going to have to beg, borrow, steal, and invent words and tones of words with which to break this silence.

Her entire essay can be taken, thereafter, as providing an understanding of why this is a reasonable, sometimes necessary, way for an investigation of pain to begin, since, evidently, agreement about

Stanley Cavell is Walter M. Cabot Professor of Aesthetics and the General Theory of Value at Harvard University.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

this is no more to be taken for granted than is agreement upon a language of pain. Das is exactly, I believe, in this beginning, being faithful to the concept of pain. She epitomizes this concept, in effect, in the last paragraphs of the essay in remarking that "denial of the other's pain is not about the failings of the intellect but the failings of the spirit." She accounts for this quality of failure early, in response to the passage she quotes from Wittgenstein (from *The Blue and Brown Books*), by noting that the utterance "I am in pain" is one that "makes a claim asking for acknowledgement which may be given or denied. In either case it is not a referential statement that is simply pointing to an inner object." In a text of mine to which Veena Das calls attention, I note that the utterance "I am in pain" is not simply a statement of fact (a point the logical positivists had their reasons for emphasizing) but is (as well) an expression of the fact it states; it is at the same time an utterance whose expression by me constitutes my acknowledgment of the fact it expresses (a point the positivists had no use for emphasizing, and that even J. L. Austin, in his critique of positivism's theory of expressive language, missed). One might even say that my acknowledgment is my presentation, or handling, of pain. You are accordingly not at liberty to believe or to disbelieve what it says—that is, the one who says it—at your leisure. You are forced to respond, either to acknowledge it in return or to avoid it; the future between us is at stake. Two implications follow: *1)* Not to respond to such a claim, when it is you to whom it is addressed, is to deny its existence, and hence is an act of violence (however momentary, mostly unnoticeable); as it were, the lack of response is a silence that perpetuates the violence of pain itself. *2)* If the study of a society requires a study of its pain, then so far as there is an absence of languages of pain in the social sciences—which is, after Veena Das's text, to say, languages in which pain is acknowledged, in which its existence is known ("witnessed" is the term she offers us, correctly and threateningly)—social science participates in the silence, and so it extends the violence it studies.

This is not exactly a "fault" of science. It happens, given what pain is, that its demand for acknowledgment is bound to be questionable in the everyday life of a society—with respect both to the justice of the demand for acknowledgment and to the degree to which that demand has been answered. (This may be taken to be

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

what Rawls's "conversation of justice," as I have named it, is meant to take up; unsuccessfully in my view.) So, I understand Veena Das's more or less implicit claim to be a double one, namely that the study of social suffering must contain a study of a society's silence toward it (or, say, the degree of its incapacity to acknowledge it), and that the study of that suffering and that silence must contain an awareness of its own dangers in mimicking the social silence that perpetuates the suffering. (Why "dangers"? One might say that a society must be allowed some degree of unconsciousness of itself, to disguise itself from itself. But a science can make no allowance for itself of such a kind. To recognize what it does not know is part of its mission of knowledge.)

But does not such a claim as I am making on Veena Das's part make a drastic, unwarranted general assumption about the relation of social science to its object of study? The assumption, as I have put it, is that the social suffering it may have to study is in fact "addressed" to the practitioner of the science, that science owes its subject a response of acknowledgment. The wish to speak of what science "owes" its subject is, I think, quite similar to the way Veena Das's writing elicits the question that dominated the thoughts of contemporaries of mine in graduate school who were engaged in social scientific fieldwork, namely whether the claim to objectivity in the description of a culture must come from a stance inside or outside the culture.

I understand her writing to seek to put such a distinction into question. It is here that the point of her citation of Wittgenstein on pain is most precise. *Philosophical Investigations* is the great work of philosophy of this century whose central topic may be said to be pain, and one of its principal discoveries is that we will never become clear about the relation of attributions of the concept of pain, nor any of the concepts of consciousness, nor, hence, of unconsciousness—neither of my attribution of pain to myself nor of my attribution of pain to others—without bringing into question the apparently endless pictures we have in store that prejudicially distinguish what is internal or private to creatures (especially ones with language, humans) from what is external or public for them.

And I take it that no escape from Veena Das's prose will be provided by hurrying to suppose that she feels addressed by her

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

subject because it is hers by birth, that she is an Indian woman, so naturally she is concerned about the fate of Indian women. As Austin used to ask about hurried assertions, "How many things are wrong with that statement?" One thing that is wrong with that statement is that her being an Indian woman seems to have more to do with her dissatisfaction with what she has said than with her motivation to say it. Something else that is wrong is the neglect of her claim that Indian women and Indian men have said plenty about the suffering she is trying to name, but that they have spoken out of frozen positions (from different idolatries, of women, of men, of nation, of God), not freely, not humanly. Something that is further wrong is the neglect of her claim (again in her final paragraph) that she has herself failed to say something specific, perhaps essential: "I have been unable to name that which died when autonomous citizens of India were simultaneously born as monsters." She goes on to remind us that one who tried to name it, whom she quotes, himself touched madness. The overarching neglect in that imagined attribution of her desire for speech and her doubts of speech about her scene of suffering is of her identifying herself, as well as being an Indian woman, as being a social scientist. It is for science that she (also) speaks, and on behalf of which she is disappointed. She does not give up on the idea that the unknown language of mourning and of healing that she seeks to name might take the form of a tone we may recognize as knowledge, as science.

But what she says, or implies, of that tone as it stands is that neither a standing idea of participation nor of observation will suffice to achieve reason in the present case. Participation is doubtful (does a society have available in every case the means to participate in its suffering, and when it does might not any given member or group of members decline to participate?), and observation is complicitous (the official response to the women's suffering precisely avoids the experience of it). I put this point earlier by suggesting that science as it stands in this case mimics its topic. This is one way in which Veena Das's idea of pain entering the body of a text realizes itself (but negatively, uncreatively): not to experience the death of these women, alive or dead, is to avoid the experience, deny it, refuse its acknowledgment; and that is either to incorporate a woman's private, unshareable, unspeakable knowl-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

edge of her death, and of the monstrousness that caused it, or to incorporate the men's public, civilized ignorance of that death and of that cause.

Let me offer a speculation in conclusion. The difference between natural and social science is not that one is interpretative and the other is not, but that in the one case conviction in its objectivity is continuous (except in intellectual crises), and that in the other conviction may have to be won afresh in each project (as if there are nothing but crises). But is there not something else? Has not Veena Das begged the question, proving only what she already assumes—that pain is a spiritual as well as an intellectual problem, that to fail to know the pain of others is to deny it, to annihilate the existence of the one who suffers? If there is a circle here, it means that something is ungrounded, at least in a sense in which we had expected grounding. But perhaps the ground is already under our feet.

This seems to me a place Veena Das finds company in work of mine, especially that on Wittgenstein. So, I will testify to my conviction in two moments in which she finds her ground: first, in her appeal to her own experience (e.g., "In my own experience the question of how good death and bad death is to be defined by the act of witnessing is a more complicated one"), an appeal in her writing that I unfailingly place confidence in and am grateful for; second, in her use of Wittgenstein's example of "feeling pain in the body of another," a passage that no one, to my knowledge, has put to more creative, nor sounder, use. I take Wittgenstein's fantasy in that passage as a working out of Descartes's sense that my soul and my body, while necessarily distinct, are not merely contingently connected. I am necessarily the owner of my pain, yet the fact that it is always located in my body is not necessary. This is what Wittgenstein wishes to show—that it is conceivable that I locate it in another's body. That this does not in fact, or literally, happen in our lives means that the fact of our separateness is something that I have to conceive, a task of imagination—that for me to know your pain, I cannot locate it as I locate mine, but I must let it happen to me. My knowledge of you marks me; it is something that I experience, yet I am not present to it, as in the experience (as Veena Das cites from Julia Kristeva) of giving birth. (I think in this connection of a remark of Catherine Clément's near

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the end of her book on opera: "The uterus. . .is an organ where the thought of beings is conceived." If such a thought marks an essential route toward overcoming skepticism with respect to the existence of oneself and others, and if skepticism with respect to others is one tacit, if blurred, model for skepticism with respect to the so-called external world, then it is perhaps no wonder that philosophers have characteristically failed either to defeat skepticism or to ignore it.) Wittgenstein had asked, "What gives us *so much as the idea* that living beings, things, can feel?"[1] This idea of the knowledge of the existence of others more or less reverses Kant's insistence that knowing is an active process, and that sensing is a passive one. My knowledge of myself is something I find, as on a successful quest; my knowledge of others, of their separateness from me, is something that finds me. I might say that I must let it make an impression upon me, as the empiricists almost used to say. (Whether that is sufficient empiricism to establish some part of a scientific discourse is perhaps a question worth trying to articulate.) And it seems reasonable to me, and illuminating, to speak of that reception of impression as my lending my body to the other's experience. The plainest manifestation of this responsiveness may be taken to be its effect on a body of writing. Whether this is ever true of one's own writing one is oneself not in a position to say. But I am sure it is true of the work of Veena Das now before us.

ENDNOTE

[1]Ludwig Wittgenstein, *Philosophical Investigations* (Oxford: Blackwell, 1958), section 283.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Mamphela Ramphele

Political Widowhood in South Africa: The Embodiment of Ambiguity

WIDOWHOOD SWEEPS WOMEN into a liminal phase in which the woman's tie to the departed spouse is publicly reenacted: "The widow in mourning having lost her spouse and yet still considered married is in a special kind of ambiguous, transitional state typically involving pollution and related beliefs."[1] The widow becomes the embodiment of loss and pain occasioned by the sting of death, and her body is turned into a focus of attention, as both subject and object of mourning rituals. The individual suffering of a widow is made social, and her body becomes a metaphor for suffering.

This essay will examine the transposition of the widow from the role of enacting and embodying personal loss to that of incorporating public loss. The shifting of the focus and locus of grief from the personal to the political adds important dimensions to the ambiguity of widowhood, the ritual dangers represented by her body, and the power that emanates from the very ritual dangers she signifies. Political widowhood raises questions of importance about pain and suffering as social phenomena, and the extent to which social space is created or denied for the public expression of pain, loss, and suffering of individual social actors.

THE POWER OF NAMING

Widowhood in South Africa is not simply about the loss of a spouse. It stands apart from widowerhood, which is, on the whole,

Mamphela Ramphele is Deputy Vice Chancellor of the University of Cape Town in South Africa.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

a transient phase when the loss of a wife is registered, grieved, mourned, and bracketed. A widower is encouraged to take on the challenge of picking up the pieces and to face life again. He is reminded that he must be strong and swallow his pain. His body is not marked in any significant way except to have his head shaved, as is the custom in most African communities. He also is required to wear a black button or arm band. The period of mourning for widowers is generally six months, compared to at least one year for widows. The widower's status is the ultimate recognition that a man's identity in most patriarchal societies is perceived and presented as complete in itself, independent from the women in his life, including his wife.

The widower's movements and social contacts are not monitored, nor does he have to stay out of the public arena, a behavior that is expected of widows. He belongs to the public arena by virtue of his manhood. The only exception to this lax treatment of widowers compared to widows in African customary practice is reported by John Rankie Goody amongst the LoDaaga in Côte d'Ivoire, a matrilineal community that monitors widowers more stringently than widows.[2] The rationale for this practice is that a widower may be so distraught by the loss of a nurturer that he may contemplate harming himself.

The fear of the ritual danger embodied in widows is expressed in terms of "heat," "darkness," and "dirt." But it is the sexuality of the widow that is singled out as the ultimate reservoir of extreme danger to herself, any partner she may encounter, and the community she lives in. In certain communities, a special ritual is undertaken to make this danger even more potent by symbolically hitting her over the head with the hoof of the cow slaughtered for her husband's funeral rites.[3] Her body is marked in different communities by some or all of the following practices: shaving her head, smearing a mixture of herbs and ground charcoal on her body, wearing black clothes made from an inexpensive material, and covering her face with a black veil and her shoulders with a black shawl.

A widow expresses her liminal status in a variety of ways depending on local custom: these may include eating with her left hand, wearing clothes inside out, wearing one shoe, or eating out of a lid instead of a plate.[4] The proscription of social intercourse

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

finds expression in widows being bound to stay at home, except for essential business trips, for which they would have to be accompanied and precautions taken to prevent them from polluting the unwary. Widows are prohibited from participation in public ceremonies and celebrations. Amongst the Warlpiri, Dussart describes how silence is also a marker of grief and mourning. Widows use sign language throughout their period of mourning, and the return to verbal speech becomes a symbolic mark of the end of mourning.[5]

Political widowhood incorporates, elevates, and transforms some of the elements of the ritual dangers embodied in personal widowhood. Individual pain and loss is claimed and given a public voice. Thus, ritual danger is contained and transformed into ritual power. By sharing the pain with the widow and her family, the circle is widened to incorporate "the political family," represented by the political formation to which the deceased belonged. The enlarged family circle brings with it resources and corresponding responsibilities and obligations.

Veena Das makes an important point that "pain is the medium through which society establishes its ownership of individuals."[6] The acknowledgment of the pain and loss of social actors is a profoundly political act. Not all widows are acknowledged as political widows, nor are all political widows "widows." The term "political widowhood" reflects the appropriation of certain women's bodies as part of the symbolic armor mobilized by political movements in the contest for moral space following the fall of heroes in the struggle for power. The claims political formations make or fail to make on the dead, and consequently on their widows, have significantly influenced the trajectories of women's lives in South Africa.

But the symbolism of political widows extends beyond those whose partners/spouses have died in a struggle. It also includes many women who lived as "widows" during the long periods of their spouses' imprisonment. The inclusion of this second category of political widow is deliberate and intended to show the complexities of the processes of negotiation of the personal and political by women who were drawn by choice or force of circumstance into the struggle for liberation in South Africa. Political widowhood is a particularly ambiguous status. It is both an acknowledg-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ment and a denial of women as social and political actors in their own right. An understanding of the impact of the processes of negotiation of gender relations in a body politic that vacillates between accepting and not accepting women as codeterminants of history is important in the unfolding reality of South Africa.

My personal interest/involvement in this exploration is as one who is "a political widow who could never be,"[7] but is nevertheless pursued by interested parties as someone who should be socially classified as a widow. Through being personally implicated in the subject of my inquiry, I bring another perspective to Veena Das's comment on the mode by which knowledge is produced in anthropology as being "the mode of intimacy" in the "here" and "now."[8] My analysis is based on personal narratives, newspaper reports, interviews with fellow travelers, and is then placed within a review of the *general* relevant literature. However, as Das emphasized,[9] it is by articulating the lived experience of political widowhood that I show how political movements fold into personal biographies.

AMBIGUITY ENACTED

The ambiguous status of a political widow goes beyond the perceived ritual danger inevitably embodied in South African women based simply on gender distinctions. The widow embodies a desired social memory about the fallen hero and the nobility of the commitment he made to the struggle. A widow must demonstrate a worthiness to personify that social memory for the benefit of society. Nobility, heroism, and the ultimate sacrifice of death, which, both collectively and individually, represent the highest ideals of public service, are not easily associated with a woman's body. Culturally conditioned oppositions create boundaries that the body politic jealously guards: male/female, sacred/profane, private/public, and personal/political. It is thus not surprising that the incorporation of a woman's body, associated with pollution and the private domain, as a social memory for public service and heroism, has to be highly ritualized to disguise the conflicts the female body inevitably suggests.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

MALE/FEMALE

The body politic depicts and treats the female body as incomplete and inadequate to the task of representing nobility, heroism, and public office. The female body usually requires a male body to render it whole and acceptable, and yet when the man's body, having lost its vitality, lies helplessly without form, its helplessness and lifelessness acquire meaning from the proximity of the relatively frail body of the widow.

The importance of the body of the woman in funeral rites is symbolized in many different ways among different cultures and changes over time within cultural groups. For example, in some Shangaan communities in the Eastern Transvaal, the widow (or widows in the case of polygamous marriages) spends the night in the same room with her husband's corpse in the company of selected older women belonging to her husband's kinship group. At some point during the course of the night, the widow is made to carry the corpse on her back to signify their ties beyond death and her strength and bravery in being able to substitute for her deceased husband when necessary. Despite the cross-cultural variations, Maurice Bloch suggests that we can construct an ideal type in which the polluting aspect of the corpse is associated with women, who also bear the responsibility of becoming the channel for the expulsion of the polluting elements through mourning.[10]

There is a sense in which *sati*—a practice prevalent in some communities, such as the Rajputs in Milia, in which widows join their dead husbands on the funeral pyre—could be seen as the ultimate incorporation of the male body into the female body. The widow, in choosing or being made to choose to join her husband on the funeral pyre, is symbolically interposing her body between the triumph of death and the man's helpless body. In this practice, the woman is seen by some as a helpless victim and by others as protecting the husband's lineage and its honor.[11] Traditionally, before a woman left the home with the intention to commit *sati*, she made imprints of her hands on the wall of the threshold among the martial communities. Men were customarily enjoined to worship these imprints before they left for war to evoke the protection given by the *sati*: the woman's body and its memory stood between a man and the dangers he faced in war.[12] If a man were to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

die heroically in the war, then his wife was expected to commit *sati,* so that the heroic sacrifice was replicated by the sacrifice of her body.

In political funerals in South Africa, particularly those involving senior political actors during the political struggle, the ritual of handing over the man's military paraphernalia to his widow amid measured salutes from his comrades dramatizes the acceptance of the female body into the holy of holies, from which she would ordinarily have been excluded. She then becomes the custodian of the symbols of his heroism. Clearly, the symbolism of gender in relation to heroic sacrifice can take different social forms.

SACRED/PROFANE

The female body is perceived in many cultures as the embodiment of the profane or unclean.[13] This profanity is particularly concentrated in a woman's sexual organs. A woman who is menstruating is perceived as posing a particular ritual danger to regenerative and reproductive activities in a community, as well as the safety of those engaged in preparation for war. A widow assumes even greater potential for ritual danger, and would thus be prohibited from going near newborn babies, growing crops, and battlefields.

Political formations across the globe have learned to harness the power of the ritual danger incorporated in widows. By selectively presenting political widows in battle against their foes, politicians create an inaccessible and ultimately unassailable political space. Thus, by exploiting the very fear that they have themselves mastered, they put their enemies in a relatively more vulnerable position.

During the time that the African National Congress (ANC) was banned, its memorabilia were prohibited—one could not wear their T-shirts, fly their flags, nor display their green, gold, and black colors without inviting serious repercussions. Yet, Winnie Mandela could defy these prohibitions by invoking her role as the political widow of the most celebrated political prisoner. In that role, she was not readily accessible to the security police, and this served the cause of the ANC very well. Winnie Mandela could also quote Nelson Mandela in public speeches, in spite of the strict

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

illegality of such an action, without any direct reaction from the security system.

PERSONAL/POLITICAL

The loss of one's partner and spouse is profoundly personal. It remains deeply etched in one's psyche and soul, defying attempts to give it an escape route through the sound of wailing or words of grief. The pain of the loss of a life partner becomes incorporated in the body of the surviving spouse, sometimes becoming inaccessible even to the sufferer.

The very nature of mourning rituals makes for little personal space, as family and friends rally around to lend support and share the pain and grief. Such support is a source of great strength for the affected person.[14] Philippe Ariès has lucidly explicated the importance of mourning as a social phenomenon and the vital role of the support offered by others in acknowledgment of one's loss. But he also points to the fact that helping the survivor was neither the sole nor primary purpose of mourning: "Mourning expressed the anguish of a community that had been visited by death, contaminated by its presence, weakened by the loss of one of its members."[15]

Thus, the meaning behind the communal support bereaved families receive is ambiguous. In focusing on the woundedness of the community, the bereaved individual may become simply part of the "ritual exercises, totally devoid of spontaneity."[16] Thus, the individual would have little space to come to terms with her personal loss, and the process of healing would be delayed.

Anthropologists have traditionally focused on the collective rather than the individual, and the individual is often subsumed as a result. James Clifford's critique of anthropology refers to the devices ethnographers have used to cope with the doubts they have had about "inhabiting indigenous minds": "Ethnographers have generally refrained from ascribing beliefs, feelings, and thoughts to individuals. They have not however hesitated to ascribe subjective states to cultures, e.g., 'the Nuer think' or 'the Zulu believe.'"[17]

Mourning rituals are, by their very nature, collective processes and have understandably received elaborate attention by anthropologists, whereas the individual's struggle with grief has not. It is

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

my contention that the lack of attention to the space required by individuals to grieve properly has impoverished our understanding of how individuals, or categories of individuals, such as children and women, within the collectives we study come to terms, if at all, with the personal loss of loved ones.

The enlargement of the circle of mourners to incorporate the body politic to which the deceased also belonged brings both added support and tension. Political formations naturally want to make as much political capital as possible out of the death of a comrade. The funeral becomes a form of political theater that has to be managed to achieve the desired outcomes for the political formation involved. Inevitably, problems arise in balancing the wishes of the family and the desires of the politicians.

The profile desired by politicians may create tensions for the family. For example, during the height of the civil war in the mid-1980s in South Africa, many families were dragged into mass political funerals against their will. They wanted to put their dead to rest without further pain, given the violent and shocking nature of the deaths of their loved ones. They also feared being caught in the cross fire between "the comrades"[18] and the Apartheid security forces, which often ensured that mourners ended up having to run for their lives without completing the final rites for their loved ones. On the other hand, mourners feared displeasing or defying "the comrades," who felt that it was the duty of the mourners to use every available means to advance the struggle and did not approve of any retreat from such awesome tasks. The staging of mass political funerals assumed enormous significance as opportunities to put the evil and brutality of the state in full public view. The more coffins one could line up, the stronger the message that could be communicated in this regard:

> I participated in one mass political funeral in Guguletu in 1985 during which there were ten identical coffins which finally arrived at the local soccer stadium at about 11.30 am for a funeral service which had been scheduled to start at 10 am. A turf battle between the security forces and the organisers of the mass funeral preceded, and delayed the service. The police wanted to prevent the mass funeral service going ahead given the political capital they knew "the comrades" would derive out of it. This police interference merely strengthened the resolve of the comrades to go ahead.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> The turf battle was only put on hold by the intervention of the priests who were to conduct the service who promised to keep the peace in exchange for the police keeping a low profile throughout the service. The funeral service was largely conducted in English, in a township where literacy levels are low (60%) and the level of competence in the English language minimal, this included the families and widows of the dead. The political theatre of mass funerals was not primarily intended for the audience in physical attendance, but for national and international audiences. The latter audience assumed greater importance in the message being communicated, because of the potential action they could mobilise in support of the cause.
>
> The bereaved families became an incidental part of the audience to this political theatre. Their personal pain and loss had little space for expression as they sat huddled together, some as strangers to one another, but united by their common pain and grief. It was a hot day, and they were sitting with little shelter or refreshments in this rudimentary soccer stadium. They cut tragic figures. It was not until 4 pm that the funeral procession left for the graveyard, and only around 5.30 pm that they finally could retreat into the personal family space to claim their loss and suffering in its full personal sense.[19]

The political theater enacted in funeral rites of a fallen hero also becomes an occasion to make a statement about his position in history, the invincibility of "the struggle" in spite of losses along the way, which suggests the dispensability of individuals, and the inevitability of the ultimate price that has to be paid for freedom. Personal pain and loss become depersonalized into one more death along the path of freedom, one more container of blood emptied to water the tree of freedom, one more statistic in the long saga of the nation's losses.

History is often reinterpreted, reenacted, and represented in a manner that is intended to shape social memory in the political speeches and other ceremonial acts that are part of political funerals.[20] Symbols in the form of flags, T-shirts, and other memorabilia find space for defiant display. One of the political widows of the mid-1980s recalls how she was shocked to find her husband's coffin wrapped in the flag of the South African Communist Party (SACP), when she had known him to have been a member of the ANC.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The claim that was made by the SACP stands unchallenged in history, because neither the dead man nor his widow could take back the powerful symbolic statement made by the wrapping of that flag. The claim on the dead man had a finality to it. But more importantly, it was a sign of the SACP's claim on the widow's body. This woman chose to exercise her own rights, strengthened by her intimate knowledge of her husband's political commitment, but she could have been put in a more vulnerable position if she had not had the personal resources to resist this pressure.

Tensions also surface around broader logistical questions regarding the choices of the location of the funeral and speakers from the family versus those from the party. Tensions related to the extent to which one gives free reign to one's sense of personal loss are no less important. On one hand, one could give free reign to one's feelings, thereby running the risk of rewarding the killers with a sense of satisfaction that they have succeeded in inflicting a mortal wound not only to the dead man, but also to those around him by leaving them helpless. On the other hand, the brave face often presented by political widows contrasts so starkly with the reality of the moment that it borders on the theatrical. Dimpho Hani's case comes to mind:

> The brutality of the assassination of Chris Hani, a prominent leader of the South African Communist Party, shocked South Africa and the world in its boldness in April 1993, just before the dawn of the liberation he fought so hard for as a senior ANC guerrilla, surviving many near deaths at the hands of the South African security forces. The right-wing assassins succeeded where their comrades in the Apartheid security forces had failed.
>
> Dimpho's grief as a widow and mother of children suddenly robbed of a loving father must have been unbearable. But she steeled her nerves and went through the pre-funeral arrangements, funeral ceremony, and post-funeral formalities with little show of emotion. She was only able to find sufficient personal space to express her grief and to take leave of her beloved during her lone daily visits to his grave in the weeks following the funeral.
>
> She was then able to restore her own internal equilibrium, and claim ownership of the pain and suffering occasioned by her husband's death. It is on the solid foundations of this personal space that she could confront the killer of her husband when he appeared in the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Johannesburg Supreme Court a few months later, not as a political operative, but as one personally wronged.[21]

Court cases following political deaths, be they inquests or, more rarely, criminal cases,[22] reenact the political drama of the death in its horrid details. The desire for the truth to be aired is in conflict with the pain it causes.

> Nyameka Goniwe, one of the widows of the Cradock four, speaks of the dilemma of wanting to know the truth, but also of the torture of the long-drawn process of getting to the bottom of what actually happened. Her husband, Matthew Goniwe, was one of four community leaders in Cradock, a small Eastern Cape Town, during the heady days of civil strife in the mid-eighties. Their effectiveness as civic leaders led to an instruction from senior police officials, sent via a top secret signal to the local security police, to have them "permanently removed from society." They were way-laid by security police at a road block on their journey home between Port Elizabeth and Cradock. Their charred bodies were found days later in a burnt out car.
>
> In a cruel twist of irony, she found herself on American National Public Radio in the run-up to the April 1994 elections in South Africa, on the same side with Dirk Coetzee a former policeman, and self-confessed murderer of political opponents, including a famous Durban lawyer, Griffith Mxenge, who is now a repentant member of the ANC. Her wish was to have the proceedings come to a close "so that I can then be able to learn to live with my pain."[23]

Full knowledge of the source of one's pain does make the suffering bearable. It puts one in a position to exercise one's right to make claims for historical wrongs done. These claims need not be exclusively material; they are, more importantly, claims for the acknowledgment of one's pain, and thus for its transformation into the arena of suffering worthy of social attention. Exposing one's wounds and having them acknowledged creates the possibility for the healing process to start from the base.

PRIVATE/PUBLIC

Death is by its very nature a public affair. The death of a person can only be registered as a memory by another. Even where the personhood of the departed is not acknowledged or recognized, as

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in a case of infanticide, or "the disappeared" in Guatemala, where widows of political activists were prohibited by the repressive regime from wearing mourning clothes, memories of deaths are carried as secret histories by families, ready for public release at more appropriate times. There is no such thing as a private death. Death attracts the public as both witness and participant. News of a death spreads very rapidly. Thus, a wider public is incorporated into the death rituals—an affirmation of the unification of humanity in a common destiny.

The desire for privacy by the bereaved often goes unheeded; if anything, it invites even greater attention because of the fear that, if left alone, the bereaved may become more vulnerable to contemplating undesirable and desperate actions (i.e., suicide). It is not uncommon for those sharing grief with the widow in South Africa to engage in endless chatter intended to make light of the moment and to temporarily take her mind off graver thoughts.

The political funeral ceremony signals a widow's entry into the public arena. Gender boundaries that the body politic polices so actively under other circumstances are lowered. The desired public profile of the widow is carefully nurtured and managed. This management includes her mourning clothes, which, while communicating grief, must also communicate dignity. The political widow, unlike other widows, does not wear the symbols of ambiguity in the form of cheap clothes worn inside out, or one shoe; the shaven head is replaced by carefully groomed hair and an appropriate hat.

The negotiation of the public space after the funeral involves a number of issues. The label of "political" widow carries with it public ownership of the person of the widow. She becomes a valuable resource for the political organization to which her husband and/or herself were affiliated. She embodies the social memory that has to be cultivated and kept alive to further the goals of the struggle, and hopefully to also act as a deterrent against further losses such as hers. She also becomes the embodiment of the brutality of the state, which leaves women like her in a vulnerable, liminal state.

Political widows are chosen, and targeted for special tasks. The label of political widow is not automatically bestowed on all women whose husbands have fallen in the struggle. The majority of women languish in obscurity because their husbands were not

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

appropriate symbols for the limelight or because they were themselves not perceived to be appropriate candidates for the role of political widowhood. The pain of these widows is exacerbated by the failure of society to acknowledge their pain, and thus to help them make sense of their losses.

> Nohle Mohapi was barely in her mid-twenties in 1976 August when her husband Mapetha Mohapi was reported by the security police to have hung himself with his own jeans on a prison door grill after only a few weeks in solitary confinement. He had joined the long list of deaths in the detention.
>
> The suicide label was one used with great creativity by the security police at the height of the repressive period. Detainees slipped on pieces of soap in showers and died, they jumped through barricaded windows whilst under constant guard, some were supposed to have starved themselves to death, whilst shaming brain damage from mysteriously sustained head injuries.
>
> But women like Nohle have also been denied a place in the social memory of South Africa because their husbands were activists who laid the foundations on which others built the visible segments of the victorious struggle being celebrated by South Africans now. Society has forgotten most of the leaders of the Black Consciousness Movement such as the Mohapi's of yesterday, and thus also forgotten their widows. Their pain is a private one. Their claims are yet to be made, let alone acknowledged.[24]

The "suicide" label is a particularly troublesome one for bereaved families to deal with. Suicide is regarded by most people in the black community as a cowardly way out of life. Heroes do not commit suicide. They are supposed to confront hardship, torture, and the tribulations of war with courage. Hence, those women whose husbands were killed by the security police but were made to appear as having committed suicide bear an added burden.

The status of "political widows" who do not officially qualify as political widows is even more ambiguous. The eagerness to label such women as political widows signals society's anxiety to reestablish its own equilibrium by symbolically removing transgressives from the liminal unknown to the liminal known where social tools exist to deal with them.

It is remarkable the extent to which my public persona is often given "respectability" by summoning Steve Biko from the grave to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

accompany me and clothe my nakedness, a nakedness that is intensely troubling to the patriarchal society I find myself in. In summoning him to my side as a "political widow who could never be," society chooses to forget the relationship I had with him as a colleague and fellow activist, but only dwells on the aspect of our relationship that presents me as an instrument of his nurture and the bearer of his son. This phenomenon extends beyond South Africa. This is not to deny the important role Steve Biko played in my personal life and development, but rather to pose the question about the extent to which that relationship has become a marker on my body that enables the body politic to relate to me. The transgressive nature of our intense relationship is simplified and normalized by the patriarchal society, thus enabling society to deal with it as well as with myself as the embodiment of that transgression. I am unwilling to have my historical agency silenced by such simplifications.

The public role of the political widow derives from her relationship with her husband; she is not seen as a woman but as someone standing in for a fallen man. She becomes the ultimate honorary man. Her relationships are shaped by her late husband's relationships: his friends and comrades become her friends; his enemies become her enemies. Her agency is not completely eliminated, but constrained. To the extent that she can renegotiate the terms of her engagement, she is able to enlarge her sociopolitical space as a public figure. It is a tough balancing act fraught with danger.

The agency of the political widow is, by definition, constrained by those sponsoring her role. To the extent that there is congruence between their goals, strategies, and tactics and her own, a political widow continues to enjoy the patronage that comes with the role. Any major divergence, particularly if it takes on a public nature, poses major threats not only to the relationships but to her public status.

> Winnie Mandela is a celebrated case of a political widow who was privileged above all other widows in similar, and in some cases worse position. Mrs. Albertina Sisulu, her contemporary in this regard, had to earn her keep, and struggle to get enough money to pay her aeroplane fare, and had to use the train to Cape Town to visit her husband, Walter Sisulu, Mandela's contemporary.[25] Both the ANC and the international anti-Apartheid movement differen-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tially supported Winnie Mandela during her many trials and harassment by the security police who both feared and hated her.

Winnie Mandela's privileged position was in part due to her status as the widow of the celebrated Mandela. But it was also because she was a suitable candidate for a visible public role: her physical beauty, her regal deportment and her flair for the right attire for each occasion, her capacity to communicate and articulate her own, and other people's pain, all stood her in good stead.

Her personality enabled her to transform herself from a victim of oppression, into a symbol of resistance and defiance. She was denied married life in the prime of her life—she was only able to live with her husband intermittently for a total period of 6 months before he was imprisoned for 27 years; detained in solitary confinement; and finally banished to a small Orange Free State town of Brandfort, she concluded that, "In my case there is no longer anything I can fear. There is nothing the government has not done to me. There isn't any pain I haven't known."[26]

She took many risks and in so doing earned the respect of all those opposed to Apartheid. The transformation of Winnie the person and woman into a symbol took many dimensions. She became "Mother of the Nation" with all the rights attached to that. But her defiance did not exclude those who were her original sponsors. She became an agent of history in her own right, and her own person in every way. It is in the interpretation of her rights and responsibility as "Mother of the Nation" that her fortunes began to decline. The "Mother of the Nation" was implicated and finally convicted of complicity in unmotherly activities of kidnapping which led to murder of a child political activist. Her highly publicised fall from grace in the ANC did not seem to dampen her spirits.

Winnie Mandela's tenacity is legendary. She has thrived on her political widowhood status, but ultimately transcended it. She is now a free agent with enough of a power base to compel her former sponsors to continue to pay their respects to her. She is the ultimate outsider-insider. She is done with the business of being a woman, and has become a powerful agent for better or worse.[27]

Winnie Mandela's case also raises further ambiguities: she belongs to a category of political widows whose husbands are not dead but imprisoned. The rhetoric of liberation, while keeping hope alive for the release of political prisoners, was particularly focused on Mandela's release, and yet the process by which one so

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

publicly visible as Winnie Mandela could be made to retreat back into the private space reserved for women was not thought through.

There was no properly elaborated ritual for her return to the private sphere as there had been for her emergence into the public sphere twenty-seven years before. The public space became contested territory between the hero and his erstwhile stand-in. It is difficult to imagine how one so publicly visible as Winnie Mandela could acquiesce to the demands to retreat into the invisibility of the private sphere.

CONCLUSION

The leaders of the new South Africa are correctly stressing reconciliation after all the years of civil war. The personal pain of Mr. Mandela as a political prisoner and his transcendence of it to become the first black leader of South Africa are offered as reasons for others to heed his call to "let bygones be bygones."

To "let bygones be bygones" presumes an acceptance of pain and the acknowledgment of that pain by one's fellow human beings, particularly those who are contextually linked to the pain: the perpetrators, the witnesses, and the companions in the post-traumatic period. Personal pain is a degrading and dehumanizing experience unless meaning is vested in it. The investment of personal pain with meaning transforms it into suffering, which then becomes a social process. The individual derives dignity out of the acknowledgment of her pain and is thus in a better position to feel worthy of the suffering, and available to the possibilities for healing.

There are too many individuals, families, and communities whose pain remains unacknowledged. The definition of "the political" as opposed to "the personal" is in itself a political question. Political widows who are victims of forced removals, random killings, or industrial accidents are as deserving as any other of making claims for historical wrongs done to them. Their private suffering needs to be made visible as social suffering, enabling them to stake their historical claims and thereby restore their dignity.

But as long as women have to resort to "widowhood" to be able to make claims on a society that does not recognize the wounds it inflicts, the dream of full citizenship for women will remain unat-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tainable. The retreat by women into nonthreatening, traditional roles may offer benefits, but they come at a price.

Druze war widows are a case in point: these women find themselves in the position of receiving generous public support, but in exchange they are expected to maintain a low public profile prescribed for all widows.[28] The "generosity" of the Israeli government is justified as payment for "a sacred debt." Druze war widows' claims of their own pain is subsumed in this rhetoric of "the sacred," which does not tolerate any "profanity." Transgressive widows, political or otherwise, reintroduce the profanity that ritualized control is intended to cleanse from their bodies.

The discourse of women as victims has been valuable to early feminism, but it has, over the years, been replaced by the reassertion of women's agency in history.[29] The theoretical formulation of human agency in history is not yet satisfactorily developed. We still cannot adequately explain why, and under what circumstances, some people act as agents of change and others do not. Women's agency is a particularly difficult area of such inquiry given the many layers of interconnectedness, negotiated meanings, and social spaces that women traverse in their daily lives.

There is one constant entity in this complex web of connectedness that may hold the key to some of the critical questions that need to be formulated towards a greater understanding of women's agency in history. A woman's body, as the embodiment of the generative and reproductive power that knits generations together, holds the secret of her ability to concomitantly embody ritual danger and ritual power. The woman is a victim to the extent that she internalizes and acknowledges only the perceived ritual danger of her body. The extent to which she also has the ritual power of her body acknowledged determines the extent to which she will be able to transform personal pain into social suffering—not on her behalf, but for the sake of the society she lives in.

ENDNOTES

[1]B. A. Pauw, "Widows and Ritual Danger in Sotho and Tswana Communities," *African Studies* 49 (2) (1990): 85.

[2]John Rankie Goody, *Death, Property and Ancestors* (London: Tavistock, 1962).

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[3]Pauw, "Widows and Ritual Danger in Sotho and Tswana Communities," 80.

[4]Ibid., 85.

[5]F. Dussart, "The Politics of Female Identity: Warlpiri Widows at Yuendumu," *Ethnology* 31 (4) (1992): 337–50.

[6]Veena Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India* (Delhi: Oxford University Press, 1995).

[7]I am referring here to the fact that if one is not formally married to a man, one cannot technically be called his widow. But for a variety of reasons, some women, who have shared special, intimate relationships with men of prominence, become associated with them in almost the same way that widows are associated with their deceased husbands.

[8]Das, *Critical Events: An Anthropological Perspective on Contemporary India.*

[9]Ibid.

[10]See Maurice Bloch, "Death, Women, and Power," in Maurice Bloch and Jonathan Parry, eds., *Death and the Regeneration of Life* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1982), 226.

[11]See Veena Das, "Gender Studies, Cross-Cultural Comparison and the Colonial Organization of Knowledge," *Berkshire Review* 91 (1986): 58–76; Vasudha Dhagamwar, "Saint, Victim or Criminal," *Sominar* 342 (1988): 34–39; Ashis Nandy, "A Nineteenth Century Tale of Women, Violence, and Protest," in V. C. Joshi, ed., *Rammohun Roy and the Process of Modernization in India* (Delhi: Vikas Publishing House, 1975); and L. Mani, "Multiple Meditations: Feminist Scholarship in the Age of Multinational Reception," in James Clifford and Vivek Dhareshwar, eds., *Traveling Theories, Traveling Theorists* (Santa Cruz, Calif.: University of California at Santa Cruz, Center for Cultural Studies, 1989).

[12]Rajeswari Sunder-Rajan, "Representing *Sati*: Continuities and Discontinuities," in Rajeswari Sunder-Rajan, *Real and Imagined Women: Gender, Culture, and Postcolonialism* (London: Routledge, 1993).

[13]Carol P. MacCormack and Marilyn Strathern, *Nature, Culture and Gender* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1980).

[14]See for example Philippe Ariès, *The Hour of Our Death* (New York: Knoff, 1981).

[15]Ibid., 582.

[16]Ibid.

[17]James Clifford, *The Predicament of Culture: Twentieth-Century Ethnography, Literature and Art* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1988), 47.

[18]Comrade is a term that gained currency in South African liberation circles in the 1980s to denote solidarity among political activists.

[19]See *Argus Newspaper* archives, 1976–1990.

[20]See Paul Connerton, *How Societies Remember* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1989).

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[21]Dimpho Hani is the widow of Chris Hani, the South African Communist Party Secretary General who was assassinated in 1993 by right-wing elements in South Africa. Dimpho is currently a Member of Parliament in South Africa. See *Weekly Mail and Guardian* archives, 1993–1994.

[22]Very few criminal cases for the many political murders committed against enemies of the Apartheid state were ever brought to court because of the close relationship between the perpetrators of these crimes and the law enforcement agencies.

[23]National Public Radio live broadcast, April 1994, USA.

[24]Nohle Mohapi is the widow of Mapetha Mohapi. See *Daily Dispatch* archives, 1976–1978.

[25]See Charles Villa-Vicencio, *The Spirit of Hope: Conversations on Religion, Politics, and Values* (Braamfontein, South Africa: Skotaville Publishers, 1994).

[26]Diana E. H. Russell, *Lives of Courage: Women for A New South Africa* (New York: Basic Books, 1989), 107.

[27]Carolyn G. Heilbrun, *Writing a Woman's Life* (New York: Norton, 1988).

[28]R. Katz, "Widowhood in a Traditional Segment of Israeli Society: The Case of the Druze War Widow," *Plural Societies* 20 (1) (1990): 22.

[29]Linda Alcoff and Elizabeth Potter, *Feminist Epistemologies* (New York: Routledge, 1993); and Sylvia Yanagisako and Carol Delaney, *Naturalizing Power: Essays in Feminist Cultural Analysis* (New York: Routledge, 1995).

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The world's most ruthless killer and the greatest cause of suffering on earth is. . .extreme poverty.

Poverty is the main reason why babies are not vaccinated, clean water and sanitation are not provided, and curative drugs and other treatments are unavailable and why mothers die in childbirth. Poverty is the main cause of reduced life expectancy, of handicap and disability, and of starvation. Poverty is a major contributor to mental illness, stress, suicide, family disintegration and substance abuse.

Poverty wields its destructive influence at every stage of human life from the moment of conception to the grave. It conspires with the most deadly and painful diseases to bring a wretched existence to all who suffer from it. During the second half of the 1980s, the number of people in the world living in extreme poverty increased, and was estimated at over 1.1 billion in 1990—more than one-fifth of humanity.

World Health Organization

From *The World Health Report 1995: Bridging the Gaps*

Geneva: World Health Organization, 1995
Reprinted by permission of the World Health Organization.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Vera Schwarcz

The Pane of Sorrow: Public Uses of Personal Grief in Modern China

All those who trade on sorrow
Must
Join together like cabbages
Must find the only possible way
To spin the pyramid around
So all four sides will be bathed by sunlight

—*Gu Cheng*
"Bulin's Last Will and Testament"

TO SPEAK TOO MUCH OF GRIEF is to blunt its edge. It might even make us deaf to the cry that sparked discourse about suffering in the first place. A cold, calculating intelligence cannot grasp the rough contours of grief. Diagnostic techniques, whether in the hands of medical professionals or political authorities, frequently maul its fragile core. To preserve the significance of personal suffering in public life we need a more indirect approach; one that accepts and, indeed, nourishes ambiguity. This, in the words of Cynthia Ozick, is the discrete province of metaphor, "the reciprocal agent, the universalizing force that makes it possible to envision the stranger's heart."[1] In order to fathom the hearts of strangers in pain, we must accept the fractured vision (and versions) of those who have known social suffering firsthand. Fragments of experience must suffice in place of encompassing theories about the nature of pain.

Vera Schwarcz is Professor of History and Mansfield Freeman Professor of East Asian Studies at Wesleyan University.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The aim of this essay about the Chinese experience of sorrow is to peel away the encrustations of bureaucratic and theoretical talk that have muffled the voice of individuals in pain. At its best, history works like poetry: it cuts through worn generalizations with the aid of discrete detail. The historical and cultural details of grief, in turn, help us avoid the predicament that Veena Das warns about when she describes the Indian victims of the 1984 gas poisoning in Bhopal: "The more suffering was talked about, the more it was to extinguish the sufferer."[2] Conversely, absence of talk—or, rather, modest use of metaphorical discourse—serves us better in the presence of massive grief.

Half a decade before the Bhopal disaster, a young Chinese poet, Gu Cheng, joined the struggle against the obliteration of the voices of sorrow in his native land. Gu Cheng was born in 1957, the year in which Mao Zedong first invited voices of criticism to flourish in Chinese society and then proceeded to silence those who had dared to speak the truth. This rhythm of hope and despair repeated itself in Gu Cheng's adolescent years as he became swept up in the Cultural Revolution of 1966–1976. Coming out of the nightmare that claimed the lives of dozens of his schoolmates and extinguished the dreams of many more, Gu penned the following brief poem in 1980, titled simply "A Generation":

> The night has given me dark eyes
> But I use them to look for light.[3]

The search for "light" with eyes trained by the darkness of pain led Gu Cheng into direct confrontation with the authorities that denied the burden of his generation's grief.

The battle over who can speak about sorrow is invariably a battle about words. The battle in 1980, as now, is fought with words. Policymakers in the Chinese Communist Party, like legal experts in India, have used language to cover up grief. They prefer to talk about the "pathology of modernity," the "diseases of Western civilization," and even "the spiritual pollution of bourgeois culture" in order to dim the very light by which the poet seeks to illuminate the specific sufferings of his generation.[4] Gu Cheng had tried to cut through this fog of generalizations with murky metaphors about those "who trade on sorrow."[5] To hear the cry of Gu Cheng, scholars of social suffering must first human-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ize their subject. In the words of Arthur Kleinman, we must leave behind the medicalized discourse of disease and listen to the illness narrative of individuals in pain.[6] In this essay I use "sorrow" and "grief" more often than "suffering" because these shorter, simpler words muffle less of the ache that colors Chinese history in our time.

The Chinese ideogram for "sorrow," *ku,* is comprised of the word for "ancient" and the radical for "grass." It captures vividly the notion of old hurt grown terribly sour over time. In fact, the same character, *ku,* can mean both "sorrow" (as in *kuhai,* a "sea of suffering") and "bitter" (as in *kugua,* the "bitter melon" grown in Mongolia). This appreciation for the bitterness at the heart of suffering is key to all Chinese expressions of grief.[7] Only those who have crossed the sea of suffering, who have tasted the sourness of sorrow, can express it in a truly convincing fashion. This intimacy with grief comes through in one of the most famous poems by Li Yu, the last ruler of the Southern Tang dynasty (A.D. 937–978). Taken into captivity, this fallen Son of Heaven wrote about his lost homeland with the bitterness of one who might have saved it. Li Yu's personal sorrow became, over time, a communal lament about the powerlessness of memory in the face of a once glorious past:

> Spring bursts, autumn wanes,
> but I have lost the scent of time.
>
> Memory—
> a merciless hound. . . .
>
> My homeland, I cannot bear
> to think of you in dead of night.
>
> Lustrous stones are rooted there still
> while my sap's gone dry.
>
> You ask, my friend,
> How deep this grief?
>
> Simply a spring swelled river
> too eager to embrace the sea.[8]

When the last ruler of the Southern Tang dynasty tried to take the measure of grief, he came up against his culture's reticence about

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

this subject. Not surprisingly, Li Yu resorted to a metaphor of nature, to a "spring swelled river" rushing into the oblivion of the sea, when he wanted to give an approximation of his pain. Long before Communist Party commissars tried to silence the voices of writers like Gu Cheng, Confucian culture itself sought to mute, or at least to moderate, the public expression of personal sorrow.

THE "TIDAL FLOOD OF HEART'S BLOOD"

Ancient psychology insisted that human nature is ordinarily in a tranquil state, like a body of still water. Emotions, especially strong feelings such as grief and sorrow, were the manifestation of harmony disturbed. When a person lost calm and balance, the "tidal flow of heart's blood" (*xin xue lai chao*) would be unleashed—not infrequently in very powerful and moving poems. The Tang dynasty poet and essayist Han Yu (764–824) described this outpouring of imbalance: "Whatsoever thing loses its calm and balance, is bound to make a noise. . . .The human voice, condensed and purified, becomes language, and literature is language further condensed and purified."[9] Han Yu himself was a master "noise" maker. A disgruntled conservative in matters of aesthetic taste, he poured his suffering into memorable poems and essays. Yet even his own creative output did not prevent Han Yu from longing for a state of undisturbed harmony, before the billows of sorrow stir up the waters of the emotionless self. In this, Han Yu partakes of the fatalism embedded in traditional Chinese psychology—a sense that strong feelings, especially of pain and suffering, accomplish little more than the uncovering of the bitterness of rancor.

This inclination toward reticence in matters of grief is given even more encompassing significance in the Taoist classic, *Jin Shu*. Lest we mistakenly blame Confucianism for keeping the lid on turbulent emotions, this third-century work reminds us simply that *qing you yi sheng, bu yi ze wu qing*: "Feelings arise out of memory. If there is no memory, feelings will dissolve as well."[10] The warning here concerns not only sorrow but all excitable life that is rooted in memory. To keep or to restore one's natural equanimity, the remembering self has to be extinguished first.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Yet this is precisely what the cantankerous conservative Han Yu was unwilling to do. This is what the captive emperor Li Yu could not fathom though he was cut off from the homeland of his memories. The inability to forget sorrow is what got Gu Cheng in trouble with the Communist authorities when he insisted on seeking "light" with the night-trained eyes of his generation. To be sure, it was easier for Gu to write about grief than it had been for his illustrious predecessors. By the time of the Cultural Revolution, China's traditional reticence about personal sorrow had been under assault for almost one hundred years.

Traditional Chinese fatalism started to erode at the turn of the twentieth century, along with the imperial system. Social Darwinism, which became popular among China's reformers, sanctioned a more aggressive attitude toward both individual and collective destiny. A civilization once eloquently indirect about disturbing emotions learned how to shout, polemicize, and artfully craft individual suffering into something publicly useful. Six decades after British gunboats challenged China's imperial order during the Opium War of 1840, Chinese radicals themselves launched an attack on Confucian tradition. By the time of the New Culture Movement (1917–1921), the Chinese imperial system had been overthrown. The Republican Revolution of 1911 had deteriorated into political wrangling among different warlords. This climate of disillusionment with political change led Chen Duxiu, who became one of the founders of the Chinese Communist Party in 1920, to call for China's first "Cultural Revolution."[11] One year before the May Fourth Movement of 1919 (the first massive student movement for science and democracy in Tiananmen Square) this Peking University professor pleaded with the young people: "If you want blessings, don't fear sufferings. The sorrows of individuals today often become the blessings of the future. . . .The individual should leave behind a society that future individuals can enjoy as well."[12]

Chen Duxiu's own world view was deeply colored by concern with the "survival of the fittest." Individual suffering was useful because it had a distinctive social purpose: it could improve the lives of future individuals. Han Yu's reluctance about making "noise" out of one's grief gave way to an almost exhibitionist infatuation with sorrow. To suffer was, almost by itself, to con-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tribute to the social revolution at hand. This notion, limited to educated youths during the May Fourth Movement of 1919, spread out to encompass the masses during the Maoist Revolution.

Chen Duxiu was the shrillest, often the most dogmatic of the iconoclastic intellectuals who broke the sound barrier surrounding suffering in twentieth-century China. But there were others, too, far more subtle, like the writer Lu Xun. He joined Chen Duxiu's call for a "Cultural Revolution" but with a burden of grief all his own. Having witnessed his father's death at the hands of traditional medical practitioners, Lu Xun became a bitter critic of slavish adherence to any inherited wisdom. Before the Republican Revolution of 1911, Lu Xun went to Japan to study modern medicine. Once there, however, he changed his calling. He turned to literature because he deemed it a more effective scalpel with which to dig out the sources of China's suffering. In the preface to *Nahan* ("Call to Arms," his first collection of short stories published in 1921) Lu Xun described his change of heart:

> I felt that medicine was not so important after all. The people of a weak and backward country, however strong and healthy they may be, can only serve to be made examples of. . .and it doesn't matter how many of them die of illness. The most important thing, therefore, was to change their spirits, and since at that time I felt that it was the best means to this end, I determined to promote a literary movement.[13]

The literary movement launched by Lu Xun and Chen Duxiu in 1918 continued apace with the social revolution that unfolded in the 1920s and 1930s. Its lofty ambition to promote a change of spirit was coarsened during the decades that followed. The White Terror of the late 1920s and the Anti-Japanese War of 1937–1945 brought violence close to the lives of Chinese people in all walks of life. A landscape long marked by natural disasters was now ravaged by politically manufactured chaos as well. First, the Nationalist Party tried to persecute the Communists into oblivion. Then the Japanese armies raided and looted much of North China. When Chen Duxiu had urged youths not to fear their sufferings, he had spoken metaphorically about how future generations would benefit from present sacrifice. Lu Xun, too, had envisaged his "Call to Arms" as a war of words. By the 1930s, however, vio-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

lence had reached his own life. After the murder of one of his young leftist friends by the Nationalist police, Lu Xun cried out in bitterness. Like Han Yu, he wished he could have kept quiet. Lu Xun longed for the muted cadence of suppressed grief, but memory would not leave him alone: "I have some memories, but fragmentary in the extreme. They remind me of fish scales scraped off by a knife, some of which stick to the fish while others fall into the water. When the water is stirred up, a few scales may swirl up, glimmering, but they are streaked with blood."[14]

This bloodying of Chinese society and of Chinese memories continued during the Communist revolution. Lu Xun himself was canonized by Mao Zedong after his death in 1936. Yet, his followers, the critically-minded intellectuals who sought to speak about the endurance of social suffering even in the "liberated areas," were ruthlessly suppressed. While he silenced the voices of those who tried to stir the bloody fish scales of memory, Mao Zedong encouraged (indeed required) the public recitation of personal grief in "speak bitterness" sessions. This stylized recollection of class-induced sorrows developed into a performance art that enabled poor peasants, daughters-in-law, and coolies to translate individual suffering into a public commodity. "Speak bitterness" sessions became dramatic events in which a member of the oppressed masses was expected to dig into his or her heart and spew out in public the sour mixture of *ku*—a personal history both bitter and sad.

The American journalist Jack Belden observed such a performance in the Communist areas before 1949. The heroine was Gold Flower, a young girl married into a miser's household. Urged, then forced by fellow women activists to speak out, the girl spat her grief onto the face of her father-in-law: "I married into your family—yes! But there's been no millet for me to eat. No clothes in the winter. Are these not facts? Do you remember how badly you have treated me in these past five years? Have you forgotten my mother was sick and you made me kneel in the courtyard for half a day? In the past I suffered from you. But I shall never suffer again."[15] Having gotten the bitter words out of her long-silenced throat, Gold Flower was pushed further. One of the other girls found it easier than the "heroine" herself to draw back her lips and launch a ball of saliva right between the eyes of the old man.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

After this first shot, others darted in, spat in his face, and darted away again. "The roar of voices grew louder. The old man remained standing with his face red and his beard matted with saliva. His knees were trembling and he looked like such a poor object that the women laughed and their grumbling and groaning grew quieter."[16]

This abusive spillover of *ku hai,* of "the sea of bitterness" that lay buried in so many hearts, was but one manifestation of the public uses of personal grief in the Chinese revolution. During the long era of Mao Zedong, from 1949 to 1976, official appropriations of individual suffering became further ritualized. *Yiku sitian* (recalling the suffering of old life while meditating on the new) became a way to enforce amnesia about unspeakable portions of one's own history. Happy, often falsified memories were inserted in the new, Communist era while the personal past remained shrouded in a mandatory condemnation of its bitterness. According to Ci Jiwei, this memory-manipulation process promoted indebtedness to the Party:

> Each reading of history or participation in *yiku sitian* is expected to redouble the memory of debts and the readiness to act as debtors. The debts are to be paid with the currency of loyalty and obedience. But the debts are piling up with each passing day, for the party never stopped doing good deeds for the People, who can only hope to repay a fraction of those debts and must pass the remainder, and a fitting sense of indebtedness, to the next generation. In this way political obligation takes on the tangible and sentimental character of interpersonal debts.[17]

In spite of all of these public manipulations of sorrow, there was one concrete consequence of the thought revolution launched by Chen Duxiu and Lu Xun in the late 1910s: suffering was no longer a worthless, personal burden. It now had a didactic value in communal life. The sour taste of *ku* became a source of positive insight. And thus, modern Chinese became spiritual kin to Jews, who also had to learn to extract lessons from suffering. In Hebrew, the very word for suffering, *tzara,* embodies this possibility. As Rabbi Benjamin Blech points out in a recent work, "Rearrange the letters of *tzara* and you have the word *tzohar,* a window. Through pain one can see further, through grief one can gain

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

remarkable vision. The pain of suffering can be turned into the pane of insight."[18]

The Jewish view of suffering insists that pain can teach us something in proportion to our willingness to question the limits of human knowledge itself. Simply put, suffering both humbles us and clarifies our minds. This is quite different from the Christian notion that pain ennobles us, that we become somehow saintly through the very act of suffering. Yet, Christian notions of pain have been projected upon Jewish suffering from Job through the Holocaust. Even such an eminently sympathetic writer as the Polish intellectual Adolf Rudnicki falls into this pattern when he states, "No other nation has so many synonyms for suffering as have the Jews. . . .Everybody knows what the Germans did during the Second World War has no equivalent in history, yet it was all contained in the Jews' ancient vocabulary."[19]

Classical Chinese, like Old English or Old French, has at least as many synonyms for suffering as the Biblical Hebrew of the Book of Job. Nonetheless, Jews and their words are seen as particularly ample for the burden of historical pain. To counter this misinterpretation, it is important to return to an essentially Jewish understanding of suffering as a challenge to human knowledge.[20] A pane of insight emerges, as Rabbi Blech points out, precisely where and when pain cannot be reduced to words. A Jewish reading of the Book of Job emphasizes this test of our linguistic and conceptual arrogance (as opposed to the Christian view that suffering is a "gift whereby character is deepened, strengthened, purified and lifted Godwards"[21]). Moses Maimonides, the great medieval scholar, insisted that the message of Job is to pay attention "to the inference to be drawn from natural matters, so that you should not fall into error and seek to affirm in your imagination that His knowledge is like our knowledge or that His purpose and His providence and His governance are like our purpose and our providence and our governance."[22]

A pane of insight opens, according to Maimonides, whenever human words and human knowing are stretched to their outer limits. The contemporary poet David Rosenberg takes this one step further when he gives Job a voice that continues to challenge our conventional ways of dealing with suffering:

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

you are all plasterers
you think you are doctors
but it's only broken walls before you

you smear them over
with a whiteness of lies
a color you take for truth itself

you should shut up before them
and your silence becomes
a road to wisdom.[23]

Survivors of the Bhopal disaster might have cried out in similar anguish. They, like Job, point toward a silence-studded road to wisdom. This is a path familiar to Han Yu, who spilled out his heart's "tidal blood" only when he could no longer contain it, and then in only the most restrained of words. Job's voice is also familiar to eccentrics and "madmen" from the time of Confucius to that of Gu Cheng. All of them seek light with night-trained eyes.

"I AM A CHILD OF SORROW"

To suffer is to be shut in, to be locked up by grief in a world without light. A pane opens when sorrow is somehow voiced, shared, spewn out of the closed world of the individual in pain. When others respond to the voice of the sufferer—not with "a whiteness of lies," nor with the platitudes of plasterers pretending to be healers, but with truthful attentiveness—the window of insight becomes broader still. The echo of genuine responsiveness gives meaning to personal grief, heartens one to say more, to probe further a wound that might have festered in silence otherwise.

In Chinese tradition, the madman and the rustic were granted the possibility of sorrowful insight. In the twentieth century, that possibility became accentuated by an almost endless series of wars and revolutions. Starting with the "Diary of a Madman" (the first short story written in vernacular Chinese by Lu Xun in 1918), public uses of grief became not only acceptable, but a powerful weapon in the struggle for enlightenment. Unlike Foucault's reading of the discourse of madness, Chinese radicals were not immobilized but empowered by talking "crazy." Such talk broke through the reserve of tradition as well as Maoist dogmatism. It allowed

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the light of dissent into the otherwise claustrophobic chamber of Chinese political life.[24]

This glimmer of light has enabled China to withstand the pressure toward "cleansing" personal and social history. In Eastern Europe, by contrast, we witness a veritable frenzy of mutual blame by former Communist Party officials and secret police agents. To be sure, China cannot undertake such cleansings because the Party is still in power in Beijing. The brutal crushing of the Tiananmen demonstrations in June 1989 proved that the state can still plaster over the truth about who killed whom. Yet, the reason for China's restraint in the rush toward what Václav Havel called "lustration" may also be found in the fact that some sunlight has already been pouring over the subject of social suffering in the works of young artists like Gu Cheng. For almost a century, Chinese poets, historians, literary critics, and even Party officials have found ways to express the burden of grief in a publicly useful idiom. If we can understand this distinctly Chinese idiom, we may be able to enrich our strategies for coping with social suffering.

Yet, the idiom is obscure, forcibly opaque so as to avoid the ire of powers to be. Those long isolated from power cannot afford to speak directly. They must veil their voices. Gu Cheng took on the mantle of the rustic who speaks in obscure words. In a poem titled "Resume," he evokes the loneliness of sorrow as a hope for understanding:

> I am a child of sorrow
> from cradle to the grave undergrown
> from the northern grasslands I walked out...
> wrapped in indifferent smoke
> I still tell my green tales[25]

At one level, this poem is simply a description of Gu Cheng's generation—a generation of intellectual youths sent into the northern grasslands to carry out the message of Chairman Mao. There, they labored and suffered deprivations and humiliations (including starvation and rape). Having gone into the countryside as idealists, they were left to contend with the indifference that engulfed all of China in the 1970s. According to Gu Cheng's father, the Army-trained professional writer Gu Gong, this is a generation that cannot but baffle and trouble its elders. Some may be tempted to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

dismiss the outcry of these youths as an imitation of Western modernism or slavish mimicking of the May Fourth tradition. But Gu Gong insists that his son crafted a whole new aesthetic out of the bleakness of his distinctive suffering:

> How can we understand, how can we penetrate the heart of the new generation, the pursuits of the new generation, the poetry of the new generation? What has formed Gu Cheng's thoughts, sounds, sense of beauty and ugliness?...Are they inherited from the new beauty and ugliness?...Are they inherited from the new schools of thought that arose after "May Fourth"? Have they been influenced by modern schools from the West? No, no, Gu Cheng has grown up in a cultural desert, in an archaic age in the arts....These poems are the spring and oasis his generation has found in the wasteland.[26]

It is in this wasteland that the "child of sorrow" found his voice. It is neither sonorous nor artful, but it does cry out with an indictment and a plea. By calling himself "undergrown" from cradle to grave, Gu Cheng is accusing the revolution of dwarfing its supporters. By persisting in the telling of "green tales," he asks others to draw sustenance from the sorrows of his generation.

A green tale is one that has the seeds of growth buried within. It is often a parable. This is the kind of tale we read about in the *Analects* when Confucius meets the madman of Qu. In Book 8, the story is told of how the recently dismissed adviser to kings, the uncrowned Sage, is accosted by the song of a seemingly deranged wanderer:

> Oh phoenix, phoenix
> How dwindled is your power!
> As to the past reproof is idle,
> But the future may be remedied.
> Desist, desist!
> Great in these days is the peril of those
> Who fill office.[27]

Confucius dismounts, eager to learn from the passing madman. But he hastens away before his message can be decoded. The unconsummated encounter ensures that the "crazy" song is heard over and over again. Unexplained, the warning grows in significance over time. Confucius, like Gu Cheng, knows that politics is a soiling affair. But the story of the Madman of Qu, like the poem

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

"Resume," tells us something else: the bitterness of the past can only be assuaged by a nuanced retelling of grief in the present. The very obscurity of the madman's song, like the young poet's murky metaphors, ensures that no one meaning will exhaust the tale of sorrow.

By remaining obscure, the "madman" also gains a measure of protection from the oppressive state. Rubie Watson, in her recent book *Memory, History and Opposition,* underscores the importance of indirect speech-acts for those who, like Gu Cheng, want "to talk back" to regimes that do not usually countenance any expression of social suffering: "The photos and personal documents of Stalin's 'disappeared' posted on a Moscow street; the creation of an unauthorized cemetery in a Soviet gulag. . .the unsanctioned mourning of Zhou Enlai in January 1976. . .were both simple and silent. . .inherently ambiguous, managing to appear individual and collective, silent and noisy at the same time."[28]

This terribly narrow ground between silence and speech, between individual grief and its indirect expression in the public domain had been explored in China for many centuries before the repressive Maoist regime. Qu Yuan, the disheartened official of the fourth century B.C., offers us an even more powerful example of the alchemy of grief than even the madman of Qu. Banished for his political opinions (not unlike former Red Guards, though they were banished for the more positive-seeming purpose of spreading the Great Helmsman's opinions), Qu Yuan decided to commit suicide, but not before pouring out his suffering in a long poem titled "*Li Sao*" ("Encountering Sorrow"). The disillusioned official met his grief head on. He did not hide from the burden of his rancorous feelings, nor did he simply cast them, along with himself, into the waters of the Milo River. Rather, according to the many layered mythology that grew up around Qu Yuan, he chose to leave behind a testament of his sorrow. That testament, like the song of the madman of Qu, echoes on in time. One man's skillfully conveyed suffering becomes a map on which others can locate their disillusionment as well:

> The age is disordered in a tumult of changing:
> How can I tarry much longer among them:
> Orchids and iris have lost all their fragrance;

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Flag and melilotus have changed to straw.
Enough! There are no true men in the state:
no one to understand me.[29]

On the surface, Qu Yuan's "Encountering Sorrow" is cluttered by images of a lover (the official) fruitlessly seeking the affections of his beloved (the king) and by flowers symbolizing the hopes of a pure-minded social servant. But underneath all the talk of despoiled orchids and iris, around the evocations of desiccated straw, is the sufferer's own diagnosis of grief: a lack of understanding in the community. This diagnosis resounds through the ages. When sorrow closes in like a vise upon the heart, the need to be heard is ever greater. Wars and revolutions bring about deafening noises of their own. It becomes more and more difficult to listen for the soft-spoken voice of grief, and all the more necessary as well.

The modern historian Gu Jiegang was on intimate terms with both the noise of revolution and the muffled cry of personal sorrow. Born in 1895, Gu was part of the May Fourth generation—the students to whom Chen Duxiu addressed his plea for suffering in 1918. This is also the generation of Mao Zedong (born in 1893), who led the social revolution that eventually engulfed and almost drowned out the voices of intellectuals like Gu Jiegang. In 1926, long before the anti-intellectual campaigns of the 1950s and 1960s, Gu Jiegang wrote an autobiographical essay for a symposium on ancient Chinese history. Already, the dread of despair could be heard.

The memory of the May Fourth Movement was still fresh in 1926. Less troubled times might have nourished more optimism among the young radicals who had begun to quarrel with tradition in the late 1910s. Gu Jiegang had been one of the most prominent participants in the May Fourth debates about new culture. He was the star pupil of such arch critics of historical scholarship as Qian Xuantong and Hu Shi. The teachers were the first to attack China's inherited values head on. They were the bitter iconoclasts who called themselves "doubters of antiquity."[30] Their students were expected to deepen the critique. Gu did this, but more thoughtfully and with more anxiety than his teachers might have imagined.

Historical criticism was not just a political program or professional interest for Gu Jiegang. Uncovering forgeries, exposing layers of mythology at the core of China's classical legacy was painful

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

and very slow work. The increasing pace of social change in the 1920s left no time and little tolerance for the scholarly passions of Gu Jiegang. His 1926 autobiography was fashioned as a boulder in the midst of a tidal river. It could not arrest the flow, but it could mark a place. Not unlike Qu Yuan's "Encountering Sorrow" or Gu Cheng's "Resume," Gu Jiegang's essay was intended to use publicly the pain of personal grief. In the Chinese tradition of the *zi xu,* his autobiographical preface was objective and subjective at once. According to Arthur Hummel, the translator of Gu's 1926 essay, this was an "intimate, unaffected. . .objective self-revelation. . .without evident self-consciousness."[31]

His family background bred into Gu Jiegang all the characteristics of a race horse. Generations of scholars before him made it possible to be brilliantly literate at an early age. He read novels and drama by the age of six and was making critical commentaries on the classics three years later. Yet, intellectual precocity left Gu Jiegang highly vulnerable as well. Physically inactive, sickly, his sufferings increased along with prodigious intellectual work. The 1926 autobiographical essay chronicles his personal sorrow along with his growing explorations of historical criticism. In 1900, when he was seven years old, he wrote his first essay on ancient history: "I placed it in my mother's vanity-box. . . .Unhappily my mother never recovered from that illness and [in the distraction] the little history was lost."[32]

The simultaneity of a mother's death and the loss of a historical essay are meant to shed mutual light on each other. The pain of being orphaned becomes a pane of insight for the older scholar who looks back over ancient classics and personal sorrow at the same time. This confluence of sadness and understanding continues in Gu Jiegang's *zi xu* when he records the death of his first wife in 1917 alongside the birth of his interests in folklore and, later, the paralysis of his beloved grandmother in 1921 alongside the beginning of his critical studies of China's most famous novel, *The Dream of the Red Chamber.* Throughout this chronicle of suffering and the emergence of critical thought, one hears the breathless cadence of tumultuous times. Like Qu Yuan, Gu Jiegang feels increasingly assaulted by society. Like Gu Cheng, he suffers from its ruthlessly "indifferent" demands. In one particularly poignant

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

passage Gu Jiegang describes himself as a mule driven to death by a merciless master:

> Society. . .insists on my being a producer and not a consumer; to speak very frankly, it does not really love me, it wants to merely use me. . . .When a mule is fully grown he is expected to recompense his owner by pulling a heavy cart, loaded with coal, rice, bricks, stones until the load becomes utterly intolerable. When the beast can no longer draw it, the lash is applied until his hide is laid open and blood flows forth. But of all of this the owner is entirely oblivious—only when the breath is exhausted and he falls dead in his tracks, can his work be said to be finished.[33]

In 1926, the mule beaten to death was only a metaphor—an extreme one, as Gu Jiegang himself hastens to add. Forty years later, however, it took on horrific reality for intellectuals of Gu's generation. During the early years of the Cultural Revolution, professors were herded into *niu-peng,* "ox pens," by their students, now turned into fierce Red Guards. They were forced to pull carts loaded with coal and bricks. At Peking University, senior professors built the very prisons that housed them from 1967 to 1968. There, they lived twenty to one room, sleeping on straw mattresses, waiting for the daily call of interrogation and beatings.

Among those incarcerated in Peking University's "ox pen" was Zhu Guanqian, China's foremost philosopher of aesthetics and Gu Jiegang's fellow activist in the New Culture Movement. Born in 1897, Zhu completed his education at Edinburgh University where he had written a masterful thesis on the psychology of tragedy. He revised this work for publication in 1933, less than four decades before he was to taste the meaning of tragedy on his own skin. An inquiry into classical Greek drama as well as modern Freudian theory, Zhu Guanqian's book may be read as a brilliant foreshadowing of the pain that befell its author, or as a parable about the inner spiritual resources that enabled him to survive suffering with dignity:

> To contemplate a great tragedy is like watching a great storm. We first feel the thrill of fear before some overwhelming power; then we are somehow uplifted by that fear-inspiring power to a level of vitality which we seldom reach in actual life. In a word, the tragic uplifts us after it has overwhelmed or threatened us. In the tragic

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> experience a rush of self-expansion follows a sense of humiliation, a feeling of wonder and admiration follows a thrill of fear.[34]

Here, individual grief is lifted out of the prison of personal experience. A truly "tragic" event, according to Zhu, is one that takes us out of the self, energized by terror and the sense of wonder that often follows in its wake.

THE WORLD'S COARSE THUMB

Zhu Guanqian had been part of a generation for whom the Cultural Revolution *could* have had tragic significance. He not only suffered its grief on his own skin, but he also had enough spiritual resources to confront the storm with vitality. The long decades of Zhu's formative development were behind him by the 1960s. He, like Gu Jiegang, had witnessed and been part of many social upheavals—some of the historical "storms" had been engineered by intellectuals (like the May Fourth Movement of 1919), some were endured by them (like the Anti-Japanese War of 1937–1945), some left a bitter taste (like the Anti-Rightist Campaign of 1957–1958). By the time of the "ox pens," Zhu Guanqian was an old man capable of what he had earlier called "reserve." The dignity that he foresaw as part of the tragic experience manifested itself through a capacity for holding back.

Older intellectuals, the most abused victims of the Cultural Revolution, had been, ironically, less depleted by its ravage than the younger Red Guards. They suffered from history, but were not overwhelmed by it. The Maoist youth, by contrast, had less spiritual terrain to build upon before the storm. Its painful decade was synonymous with their formative years. The Cultural Revolution became their whole life. And it continues to be the hole through which they view subsequent history. Their wounds have yet to be fully converted into a source of insight.

When I met Zhu Guanqian on April 2, 1980, I was not prepared for the vitality of this aged survivor. I had heard that he was one of the senior professors most severely beaten in the *niu-peng*. The bent, slowly shuffling walk of the octogenarian who greeted me in the offices of the Beijing University Philosophy Department confirmed my image of the pathetic victim. Then, I noticed his eyes.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Though weak, they shone with excitement as he spoke about his current work—a translation and critical study of Vico's "New Science."[35] We did not talk about the "ox pens" since the subject was too raw in the first few years after the death of Mao. But it was clear that Zhu Guangian was trying to rethink history on his own terms. The aesthetician who began his distinguished career with the psychology of tragedy, with the study of Freud and Croce, was now breaking new ground through his scrupulous historical studies. His thought had been affected, even deflected by the Cultural Revolution. But it had not been overwhelmed.

Zhu remained a vital thinker in spite of the beatings he endured. In his animated conversation about the historical significance of tragedy, I glimpsed the writer of the 1930s who had inspired several generations of Chinese intellectuals with his "Letters to Youth." The same old man who was approaching the tough text of Vico with fresh insight in 1980 had been admonishing youth to take their historical experiences seriously since the May Fourth Movement of 1919. In simple yet artful words, he had spoken to them about beauty, sex, and truth, about Goethe and Leonardo da Vinci.

In one of his "Letters to Youth," Zhu Guanqian describes his own feelings upon seeing the Mona Lisa in Paris and concludes with advice about building up inside oneself enough reserves of beauty and spirituality to withstand "the world's coarse thumb." This phrase comes from Browning's poem "Rabbi Ben Ezra," which Zhu quotes admiringly:

> But all the world's coarse thumb
> And finger failed to plumb...
> Thoughts hardly to be packed
> Into a narrow act,
> Faces that broke through thoughts and escaped,
> All I could never be,
> All, men ignored in me,
> This I was worth to God, whose wheel the pitcher shaped.[36]

Four decades after this letter, Ji Xianlin—one of the "youth" who most admired its author—became Zhu Guanqian's "pen-mate" at Beijing University. By 1967, Ji himself had become a distinguished professor of Sanskrit and Indian religions. Born in

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

1911 (the year of the abortive Republican Revolution), Ji Xianlin spent the years of World War II in Göttingen, one of the very few Chinese intellectuals who was able to witness and comment on the rise and fall of Nazism firsthand. That historical experience would stand Ji Xianlin in good stead during the Chinese Cultural Revolution. It strengthened him and gave him perspective—precisely what Zhu had advised much earlier. The "world's coarse thumb" was merely a poetic phrase in the early 1930s but it became an intrusive reality in the "ox pens." There, the older professors were packed in; there they labored in terror; there they had to find ways to safeguard a little bit of thought and fancy from the persistent interrogations of ideology-crazed youth.

During the Cultural Revolution, the wheel of history seemed to crush, or at least permanently alter, the consciousness of so-called "class enemies" like Zhu Guanqian and Ji Xianlin. Yet, in the end, as Zhu foresaw in the 1930s, the pitcher shaped the wheel. By 1986, the year of Zhu Guanqian's death, Ji Xianlin commemorated his teacher-friend in words that made his moral victory amply apparent. Sorrow had acquired meaning through the very dignity that the sufferer had managed to maintain during the worst abuses of the Cultural Revolution. Whereas Zhu had been eloquently reticent about his own grief during our meeting in 1980, Ji Xianlin—a similarly vital and thoughtful old man—could afford to recall the failure of total humiliation that took place in the "ox pens:"

> In the thirty years [since the founding of the People's Republic in 1949] storms raged, and some of the older intellectuals who bore them were refined by the process. The most telling example of this is the catastrophe of the decade [of the Cultural Revolution, 1966–1976]. Mr. Meng Shi [Zhu Guanqian's given name] was incarcerated in the ox-pens. . . .My former teacher would now become my pen-mate. Life in the ox-pens cannot be easily described. Perhaps it is best omitted here. But there is a small incident about Mr. Meng Shi in the ox-pen that I will never forget. His short stature always made it hard for him to move, made him grow stiff easily. Yet in the most inhospitable environment of those times, he insisted on physical and spiritual exercise. I was most shocked by this, and also fearful for him. At night, after the lights were turned off, he tossed and turned in his bed studying some famous pavilion. In morning,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> he would run to a corner and practice *tai ji quan.* One time, he was discovered by the so-called "staff to promote reform." They beat him fiercely. In the eyes of these young "lords," our bodies and souls had committed grave sins. This incident might seem small, yet its significance is not. . . .Mr. Meng Shi did not despair about our calling. He would never raise his hand to take his own life. In other words, he was rather different from our other brothers in misery who were overwhelmed by the humiliation. I never spoke to him about this, but it is vividly engraved in my heart.[37]

Reticence still prevails in this account of humiliation. Ji Xianlin details only one fragment of life in the ox pens. His teacher's death licenses painful recollection as well as a play on words. Zhu Guanqian, noted aesthetician, and Ji, the famed Sanskritist, had been *peng you*—an expression that can mean both "friends" and "pen-mates."[38] The awful decade endured with quiet dignity was not a subject of conversation between them. Death loosened, only somewhat, the tongue of the younger survivor. Yet, the significance of this memory is not to be missed: it aims to prove the limited dominion that the "world's coarse thumb" has even in the darkest hours.

Suffering, as Veena Das aptly put it, "poses an existential and cognitive problem of loss of meaning."[39] This is also the challenge to our knowledge categories that Moses Maimonides saw at the core of the Book of Job. Religion can help us face this epistemological challenge and so can memory, with its conscious attachment to cultural tradition. Zhu Guanqian managed to hold back part of himself from the brutally intrusive Red Guards by practicing *tai ji quan* and by meditating on an old pavilion glimpsed from the window of the "ox pen." His former student Ji Xianlin, though given to deeper despair about the shared calling of intellectuals, insists that he was the author of his own fate. Recalling the painful times of the Cultural Revolution allows this sufferer to reclaim some freedom and dignity in the face of history.[40]

Gu Jiegang, the pain-ridden historian, also sought such solace in the writing of his autobiography in 1926. Although the image of a mule beaten to death was only a metaphor, he knew the coarseness of the world on his own skin. In addition to the chronicle of sorrow (the death of his mother, wife, and grandmother) that accompanied the evolution of his critical faculties, he takes note of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the intrusion of history on the work of the historian. During the very months that he was working on the autobiography, a war between warlords had broken out in Beijing:

> The aeroplanes made their daily round, the populace had visions that demons of death were circling over the city. Members of my household were so frightened that the mere clanking of covers on water-jars or the slamming of doors in the court-yard created illusions of hissing bombs and cannon's roar.[41]

For an ill man with nerves made taut by prolonged insomnia, this was sheer torture. To make matters worse, Beijing University, Gu Jiegang's employer during those months, issued only 15 percent of the faculty salaries. The pressure to provide for his family, to write the autobiography, and to keep on with research almost crushed Gu Jiegang. Yet, as the pain-drenched essay makes amply clear, he persisted—feeling soiled as well as inspired by history:

> I feel as though I were in the position of a sorter of old rags and paper in a paper-factory, where materials are unending, offensive, unclean and disorderly. Being without suitable tools, the worker is reduced to sorting with his own bare hands. Yet I cannot say that I am disgusted with my task or ever lose heart—I simply follow the program I laid down, and in that way manage to make moderate progress.[42]

This determination to proceed with sorting out "old rags" recalls the magnificent modesty of Camus's plague. But Gu Jiegang gives himself no heroic airs. He does not magnify the existential significance of historical research. He is simply reclaiming a small corner of his own mind from the all-intrusive pressure of society. It is this gesture that was reenacted by Zhu Guanqian in the "ox pens" and that was impossible for the younger Red Guards, who were consumed by the ritual obligations of the Cultural Revolution. The students were the "staff" promoting "thorough reform" in the "ox pens." Yet they were deeply victimized by the suffering perpetuated upon their elders. Their whole youth was consumed by acting according to an absolute faith in Chairman Mao. When that faith snapped, they remained trapped in a net of emptiness, burdened by their own wounds.[43]

After the death of Mao in 1976, with great difficulty, the younger generation started to reappropriate the tradition of the Madman

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

of Qu. Having become rusticated because of dogmatic idealism, they returned to the cities with a howl of remonstrance. They showed off their wounds; they wrote elusive poems like those of Gu Cheng; they tried to warn subsequent generations of students about the entanglement of politics. Like the itinerant singer who accosted Confucius, they sought to disturb the consciences of those who had not suffered, or those who took suffering too lightly. Although Gu Cheng's generation of former Red Guards did not succeed in averting subsequent disasters (to wit—the terrible persecution of youth during the 1989 crackdown in Tiananmen Square), they have revived public appreciation for the voice of personal sorrow.

THE VOICE OF THE UNDISTURBED IS THIN AND LIGHT

In 1980, a seventy year old Chinese intellectual arrived in Japan to talk about the poetry of grief. Qian Zhongshu was no ordinary scholar. He was part of Ji Xianlian's superbly literate and much persecuted generation. Famous as both a novelist and a literary critic, Qian Zhongshu did not go to Japan wearing suffering on his sleeve. Rather, in the muted tone that is his distinctive hallmark, he spoke about himself as a "country bumpkin," as someone who "can't find a house with eaves to shelter you from rain."[44] Only those intimately familiar with the deprivations and humiliations endured by Chinese intellectuals in the Mao era might decode this metaphor. Yet, even unexplained, it serves as an appropriate springboard for Qian's meditations on the poetry of grief.

Qian Zhongshu did not go to Japan to lament his own sorrow, but rather to speak about the depths achieved by other Chinese who suffered from history. *"Shi ke yuan"* ("Poetry may be used to grieve"), the title of Qian's public address in Kyoto, is drawn from the Confucian *Analects*. There, the ancient Sage suggested that poetry has several functions, one of them being to convey grief. The word *yuan,* however, does not connote merely "grief" and "sorrow" but has the added edge of "rancor" and "grudge." Qian Zhongshu, the man who refused to be rancorous in public about his own suffering during the Cultural Revolution (even in a preface to his wife's memoir about their years of persecution in the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

countryside[45]), managed nonetheless to evoke the complex mindset of those racked by pain.

Away from his native land, through the roundabout discourse of literary criticism, a victim of persecution translated his own sorrow into a pane of insight. Indirectly, Qian Zhongshu makes use of his own experience with the disturbances of history to clarify the grief of others who were ensnared by their times. Foremost among the predecessors thus illuminated are Si Ma Qian, the historian-eunuch of the Han dynasty, and Han Yu, the Tang dynasty poet-official-essayist who wrote about the "noise" of disturbing emotions. By situating himself in a lineage of men literally and figuratively deformed by history, Qian Zhongshu shows how grief need not become a rancorous sore. Instead, through the alchemy of poetry, it becomes something meaningful as well as beautiful—in the manner of an oyster whose sickness breeds pearls and of the cedar whose drooping develops its much-praised knobs.

Qian Zhongshu himself is like a knobby cedar. A cosmopolitan intellectual trained abroad, he returned to China to witness the war against Japan and the repeated cycles of revolutionary mobilization that eventually cannibalized his own life during the Cultural Revolution. Yet, all this experience with the ravage of history did not leave Qian rancorous but, rather, full of grief. His words of appreciation for the voices of past victims of historical suffering may be used to describe his own powerful writing: "The voice of the undisturbed is thin and light, that of the sorrowful refined."[46]

These words may be read to praise suffering as the royal path to good writing. But Qian Zhangshu is too sober a sufferer to go that far. He is intimately familiar with the wide variety of faked sorrow that was cultivated by Chinese literati who sought to give their writing the added depth of grief:

> Some young fellow moans about the inconveniences of age; some fat cat wallowing in lucre bewails the trials and tribulations of poverty; an ordinary person experiencing a nice, ordinary day waxes lyrical on the subject of "strong sorrow" or the "melancholy of autumn."[47]

Low-cost sorrow does not give us depth of understanding, regardless of the writer's literary ambitions. If we are moved by the voices of pain, it is because they bear the imprint of genuine history. Qian Zhongshu's caution must be heard: suffering cannot

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

be sought or manufactured. Once encountered, however, it may be used to illuminate corners of human experience too dark to even imagine before.

This is Job's message to our time as well: not to wallow in the grandeur of our imagined or real pain, but rather to push language and the categories of our knowing to the edge. Job, like Han Yu and Qian Zhongshu, is left with bitter fragments of speech in his mouth. It is these fragments that the poet David Rosenberg reassembles to show Job's quest for a new way of living *with* suffering:

> O earth, cover not over my blood!
> don't be a tomb a museum
> for my miserable poem
>
> my cry against this sinking
> leave my voice uncovered
> a little scar on your face...
>
> because he brought me out here
> into the darkness
> where I must continue speaking...
>
> my voice goes out of me
> a wounded bird.[48]

To say that pain has no music is to know that those who suffer are in a hell without song. Broken speech and scars are metaphors that cannot be laced with romantic meaning. Yet, in the very hell of grief, a rope is flung or created. This is what David Rosenberg does through Job's confession: "I must continue speaking." This, too, is Qian Zhongshu's point when he calls poetry a vehicle of grief. And also what the former Red Guard Gu Cheng creates in a poem called "Feeling." This work continues the theme of "Resume" by mirroring the poet's deformities:

> My shadow
> Is twisted.
> I am trapped in a landmass.
> My voice is covered with
> Glacial scars,
> Only the line of my gaze
> Is free to stretch.[49]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Gu Cheng's poem is not the outcry of some young fellow who moans about the inconveniences of the age. He endured its ravages on his own skin. When he talks about a twisted shadow, it is to evoke the real misshapenness of his generation of forcibly exiled youth. Like David Rosenberg's Job, Gu Cheng is a poet both wounded and wounding. Having suffered "glacial scars," he goes on to stretch and push language past its breaking point. In his poem "Feeling," the violence of the poet is cast in a passive voice. Only his twisted shadow bespeaks a deformation that goes beyond the sufferings of his generation.

The full extent of Gu Cheng's trauma did not become apparent until years later, after he left the "trapped landmass" of his motherland. Far from China's shores on an island in New Zealand, Gu Cheng spent years dissecting his mother tongue, pushing closer and closer to the broken sound of birds.[50] Then, on October 8, 1993 he murdered his wife and himself in an act of supposed revenge. Xie Ye, the bride of his youth, a woman who had also been through the deforming experience of the Cultural Revolution, seemed on the verge of leaving him. Realizing too late that "all I ever wanted had been right at my side,"[51] Gu Cheng cut short two lives. In a letter to his son, Mu Er, he wrote, "I once thought of writing a book to let you know why I was afraid of you, wanted to leave you, love you. Your mother wants to go off with someone else, she broke up this home, at the moment when your father was on the verge of regret and return and went off with another. . . .Don't blame your father, he loved you, loved your mother, he could not live without his family. . . .I hope you will not be too much like me."[52]

Here, a convoluted version of individual grief is used to silence two lives and maim a third. The effort to find some way to translate personal sorrow into a meaningful public idiom failed for Gu Cheng. In the end, he lacked *ren* (endurance)—a word that in Chinese can also mean "pain" and "suffering." The ideograph for "endurance" is composed of a knife poised over the heart. To go on with life after sorrow, to be on intimate terms with grief is to accept the ever-present possibility of violence, emotional as well as physical. Those who manage to survive the brutalities of history must also learn to live with the threat of humiliation even as they craft literary works. Gu Cheng in New Zealand was incapable of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ren. Gu Jiegang, Zhu Guangian, Ji Xianlin, and Qian Zhongshu, on the other hand, outwitted the bitterness of their history. Being older than Gu Cheng, these intellectuals had more inner resources to give suffering meaning. As part of the pre-1949 generation, they had full access to China's cultural inheritance. They had not grown up in a "wasteland" like Gu Cheng. They knew and could build upon the tradition of Confucius's madman and that of Qu Yuan and Han Yu. Broken spirited and broken tongued, these twentieth-century survivors of war and revolution managed nonetheless to craft works of hope. Their hope was neither grandiose nor eloquent. Rather, in the words of Lu Xun, they doggedly stayed on the path, even where there was none: "Hope can be neither affirmed nor denied. Hope is like a path in the countryside: originally there was no path—yet, as people are walking all the time in the same spot, a way appears."[53]

This is what we must do as well. Those of us who seek to understand and to rethink the meaning of social suffering cannot but stay on the path that is no path at all. Broken words, fragments of metaphors, snippets of survivor testimony are all we have to guide us. But this may prove enough. By examining and reexamining the way in which communal and individual sorrows shade into each other, a way may yet appear.

ENDNOTES

[1]Cynthia Ozick, *Memory and Metaphor: Essays* (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1989), 279.

[2]Veena Das, "Moral Orientations to Suffering: Legitimation, Power and Healing," in Lincoln C. Chen, Arthur Kleinman, and Norma C. Ware, eds., *Health and Social Change in International Perspective* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard Series on Population and International Health, 1994), 163.

[3]Helen F. Siu and Zelda Stern, eds., *Mao's Harvest* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1983), 16. For a fuller discussion of Gu Cheng's generation of poets—the so-called "wounded" generation that came to public attention in the late 1970s—see Vera Schwarcz, "In the Shadow of the Red Sun: A New Generation of Chinese Writers," *Asian Review* (Fall 1989): 4–16.

[4]It is interesting to note that many of the same terms that are used to dull the edge of suffering in China are also used in Japan. See Margaret Lock's discussion of *bunmeibo* ("diseases of civilization") in Margaret Lock, "Flawed Jewels and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

National Dis/Order: Narratives on Adolescent Dissent in Japan," *The Journal of Psychohistory* 18 (4) (Spring 1991): 511–17.

[5]Gu Cheng, *Bulin's Last Will* (Hong Kong: Nineties Press, 1989).

[6]Arthur Kleinman, *The Illness Narrative* (New York: Basic Books, 1988).

[7]For a fuller discussion of the way in which Chinese theories of language can affect (and change) Western thought, see Chad Hansen, "Chinese Ideographs and Western Ideas," *The Journal of Asian Studies* 52 (2) (May 1933): 373–99.

[8]My translation of Li Yu's "Yu Mei Ren," in *Kuei Yeh Chi*, ed. Wu-chih Liu and Irving Yuching Lo (Sunflower Splendor) (Bloomington, Ind.: Indiana University Press, 1976), 133.

[9]Han Yu, "Song Meng Dongye Xu" (A dedication in honor of Meng Dongye), quoted in Qian Zhongshu, "Poetry as a Vehicle of Grief," *Renditions* (Spring & Autumn 1984): 29.

[10]I am indebted to Professor Yü Ying-shih of Princeton University for extended conversations about the sources of personal and public memory in traditional China. It was Professor Yü who first drew my attention to the late third-century Taoist classic *Jin Shu*. The Taoist injunction against memory as the focus of disturbing emotion is also echoed in Confucian admonitions on filial piety that require one to maintain mental well-being—if not for one's own sake, at least for one's parents'. According to Han Confucians, as well as Taoists, to dwell on the painful past is to arouse distressing, dangerous, and—in the long run—unfilial emotions.

[11]For a fuller discussion of the term "Wen hua geming" during the late 1910s, see Vera Schwarcz, *The Chinese Enlightenment* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1986), 94–144.

[12]Chen Duxiu, "Rensheng wenti faduan" (The origins of the question of human existence), *Xin qingnian* (New Youth) (February 1918): 101.

[13]Lu Xun, *Quan Ji* (The Collected Works of Lu Xun) (Beijing: Renmin wenxue chuban she, 1982), vol. I, 416–17.

[14]Lu Xun, "Dao nian Wei Suyuan," in Ibid., vol IV, 67.

[15]Jack Belden, *China Shakes the World* (New York: Pelican Books, 1973), 389.

[16]Ibid., 390.

[17]Jiwei Ci, *Dialectic of the Chinese Revolution: From Utopianism to Hedonism* (Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1994), 82–83.

[18]Benjamin Blech, *The Secret of Hebrew Words* (Northvale, N.J.: Jason Aronson Inc., 1991), 90.

[19]Adolph Rudnicki, *Ascent to Heaven*, trans. H. C. Stevens (London: Dennis Dobson, Ltd., 1951), 23. This story and its assumptions about Jewish memory are discussed further by Sidra Ezrahi in "The Holocaust Writer and the Lamentation Tradition," *Confronting the Holocaust*, ed. Alvin H. Rosenfeld (Bloomington, Ind.: Indiana University Press, 1978), 134–39.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[20]I am greatly indebted to Professor Stewart Miller from the University of Connecticut for drawing my attention to distinctively Jewish conceptualizations of suffering, especially in Louis Jacobs, "The Beraita On Sufferings in B. Berakhot 5a b," *Studies in Aggadah, Targum and Jewish Liturgy* (Jerusalem: Magnes Press, 1981).

[21]John Edgar McFayden, *The Problem of Pain: A Study in the Book of Job* (London: Jame, Clarke & Co., 1909), 259.

[22]Moses Maimonides, *The Guide of the Perplexed,* trans. Shlomo Pines (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1963), 497.

[23]David Rosenberg, *Job Speaks* (New York: Harper & Row Publishers, 1977), 25.

[24]In contrast to China, with its waves of war and revolution and often *forcible* expressions of private grief in the public domain, Japan has maintained its reticence about suffering. Even with the rich Buddhist vocabulary available to talk about the problem of pain (both individual and social), people in Japan, according to Margaret Lock, "do not share suffering by speaking about it or spewing it out—on the contrary one swallows it down. But, one can relive it in memory by reading and reflecting on the sorrowful writings of others, on poetry and reconstructed historical accounts all of which individuals can draw from *privately* to help them swallow the pain." Personal communication, 29 August 1994.

[25]Gu Cheng, "Ziwo jieshao" (Resume), translated in *Seeds of Fire: Chinese Voices of Conscience,* ed. G. Barme and J. Minford (New York: Hill and Wang, 1988), 238.

[26]Gu Gong "The Two Generations," in Siu and Stern, eds., *Mao's Harvest,* 14.

[27]This passage from Book VIII of the *Analects* is translated and discussed at length in Lawrence Schneider, *The Madman of Ch'u* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1986), 17–21.

[28]Rubie Watson, ed., *Memory, History and Opposition* (Santa Fe, N.Mex.: New Mexico School of American Research Press, 1994), 7.

[29]This specific translation of Qu Yuan's much studied *Li Sao* comes from Lyman P. Van Slyke, *Yangtze: Nature, History and the River* (Reading, Mass.: Addison-Wesley Publishing Company Inc., 1988), 135.

[30]For a further discussion of Qian Xuanton's self-appellation *yigu* ("doubter of antiquity") as well as the entire New Culture Movement see Schwarcz, *The Chinese Enlightenment,* 25–35.

[31]Arthur Hummel, "Introduction," in *The Autobiography of a Chinese Historian* (Leyden: E. J. Brill Ltd., 1931), vii. In this introduction, Hummel suggests that the closest parallel in modern Western writing to the Chinese tradition of objective autobiography may be found in Thoreau's "Walden."

[32]Ibid., 8.

[33]Ibid., 174.

[34]Zhu Guanqian, *Beiju xinli xue* (The psychology of tragedy) (Anhui: Jiaoyu chuban she, 1989), 433–34.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[35]This encounter with Zhu Guanqian is described in Vera Schwarcz, *Long Road Home: A China Journal* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1984), 242–44.

[36]Zhu Guanqian, "Gei qingnian de shier fengxin" (Twelve letters to youth), *Zhu Guanqian quanji* (Complete Works of Zhu Guanqian) (Anhui: Jiaoyu chuban she, 1987), vol. I, 55.

[37]Ji Xianlin, "Ta shixian le shengming de jiazhi" (He realized the value of life), *Zhu Guanqian jinian ji* (Commemorating Zhu Guanqian) (Anhui: Jiaoyu chuban she, 1987), 28–29.

[38]This wordplay came up several times during my interview with Professor Ji Xianlin on 2 November 1993 at his home on the campus of Beijing University.

[39]Das, "Moral Orientations to Suffering," 139.

[40]Interview with Ji Xianlin, 2 November 1993.

[41]Hummel, *The Autobiography of a Chinese Historian,* 183.

[42]Ibid., 177.

[43]This image of social life as a suffocating "net" appears in much of the writing of the "wounded" generation of former Red Guards and is discussed in Jonathan Spence, *The Gate of Heavenly Peace* (New York: The Viking Press, 1981), 370.

[44]Qian, "Poetry as a Vehicle of Grief," 21.

[45]Qian Zhongshu, "Preface" to Yang Jiang, *A Cadre School Life* (Hong Kong: Joint Publishing Co., 1982).

[46]Qian, "Poetry as Vehicle for Grief," 32.

[47]Ibid., 35.

[48]Rosenberg, *Job Speaks,* 39, 61, 78. Job's insight into difficulties of broken speech are also mirrored in a poem by Ellen Bryant Voight. As an American writer, her voice is not scarred by the Jewish poet's religious outrage nor by the historical burdens of Qian Zhongshu. Yet Voight comes to the same conclusion: we must not confuse real suffering with the beauty and depth it imparts to the voice of those who endured its humiliations:

> This wasn't the music of pain. Pain has no music,
> pain is a story: it starts,
> Eurydice was taken from the fields.
> She did not sing—you cannot sing in hell—
> but in that viscous dark she heard the song
> flung like a rope into the crater of hell.

Ellen Bryant Voight, "Song and Story," *The Best American Poetry 1993* (New York: Collier Book, 1993), 212.

[49]Gu Cheng, "Ganjue" (Feeling), translated in Siu and Stern, eds., *Mao's Harvest,* 40.

[50]Gu Cheng talked to me about his life and writing in New Zealand during a 1985 symposium on poetry held at Asia Society in New York. See Schwarcz, "In the Shadow of the Red Sun," 4–5.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[51]Gu Xiang, "Gu Cheng, Xie Ye zuihou de rizi" (The last days of Gu Cheng and Xie Ye), *Jiushi niandai* (The Nineties) (May 1994): 80. I am very grateful to Professor Kim-Ya Tam of Trinity College for drawing to my attention these three essays by Gu Cheng's older sister.

[52]*Jiushi niandai* (July 1994): 103.

[53]Simon Leys, *The Burning Forest* (New York: Holt, Rineholdt and Winston, 1984), 223.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Tu Wei-ming

Destructive Will and Ideological Holocaust: Maoism as a Source of Social Suffering in China

CHINA HAS WITNESSED MASSIVE SUFFERING in her modern transformation. Without exaggeration or a stretch of the imagination, an examination of the frequency and magnitude of destructiveness in China since the mid-nineteenth century may reveal it to have been one of the most violent countries in human history. A chronology of China's man-made disasters, generated by domestic conflicts as well as outside aggression, in the last 150 years makes it blatantly clear that a defining characteristic of modern Chinese history is the destruction of lives, property, institutions, and values. The poignant question, "Why does a culture that condemns violence, that plays down the glory of military exploits, that awards its highest prestige to literary rather than martial figures, and seeks harmony over all other values, in fact display such frequency and variety of violent behavior, that is of the use of physical force against persons?"[1] needs to be addressed. By examining the political, moral, and cultural nexus that has generated so much human misery, we can understand both the social sources of that suffering and the historical shape that much of the collective experience of brutal trauma has taken on the contemporary Chinese social landscape.

It is convenient to single out imperialism as the major cause of China's disorder in modern times. After all, the Taiping Rebellion, which displaced more than ten million people, the unequal treaties that significantly undermined the political authority of the Chinese

Tu Wei-ming is Professor of Chinese History and Philosophy at Harvard University and, effective January 1, 1996, Director of the Harvard-Yenching Institute.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

state and carved China into foreign spheres of influence, the disintegration of the Manchu empire, Japanese aggression, the internecine warfare among the warlords, and the showdown between the Nationalists and the Communists, which contributed to an inestimable loss of lives, property, institutions, and values, are all easily attributable to the coming of the West as an engine of destruction.

Yet, the most devastating period of social suffering in China has occurred during the last forty years, after Mao Zedong proudly announced at the founding of the People's Republic the removal of feudalism and imperialism, the two great mountains blocking China's modernization. Imperialism was historically responsible for initiating a process of fundamental restructuring of society that eventually led to the establishment of the Communist leadership in China. But the style of political control that was instrumental in inflicting unprecedented suffering among the Chinese people was a mixture of several factors that are largely independent of the damage caused by the imperialists. Indigenous Maoist ideological assaults must be held accountable for much of the collective suffering in socialist China. To be sure, Marxist-Leninist and Stalinist policies were inseparable from the imperialist discourse. China's domestic policies were often responses to geopolitical conditions abroad, shaped predominantly by the Americans and the Russians. From the Chinese perspective, the Korean War and the war in Vietnam incited much of the anti-American sentiment that, in turn, profoundly influenced the modus operandi of China's economy and polity. Nevertheless, it was Mao's destructive political-moral will and the ensuing radical ideology that created the havoc of China's peculiarly violent twentieth-century society.

The peculiarity of this modern Chinese version of social violence and its traumatic aftermath in prolonged social suffering is complex and elusive. Not only the available methods of analysis but also the familiar conceptual apparatuses are inadequate to come to terms with this historical complex. A new orientation is needed. Ordinarily, violence can be portioned into victims and victimizers; even though victims may be implicated sometimes as active contributors or instigators of violent acts and thus partly responsible for their suffering, the victimizers are held accountable as the agents who have inflicted physical injury or psychological pain. In the Chinese case, millions suffered, including those who occupied

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the most powerful and influential positions, yet the victimizers could not be easily identified, and the victims, by and large, felt profoundly guilty without being able to specify the causes for their suffering. The pervasive destruction affected millions, yet the real culprit behind the scenes of death and desperation was unnamed. Such was the sinister force of this ideological holocaust!

However, it is important to resist the temptation to present the history of Chinese communism in purely negative terms. China emerged from a semicolonial country, a mere geographic expression, to become a unified, independent, modern civilization-state: production and services increased at a steady rate for more than four decades; the infrastructure of the country (e.g., irrigation, sanitation, transportation, and communication) improved significantly; the quality and spread of public health virtually doubled the average peasant life expectancy; and Chinese workers, farmers, and soldiers have maintained a respectable living standard among developing nations. All of these improvements happened during the Communist rule. It is also important not to blame Mao as solely responsible for the ideological holocaust. We learn from historians, such as R. MacFarquhar, that Mao was not particularly active in the infamous Anti-Rightist Campaign (Deng Xiaoping was much more involved in destroying the livelihood of the liberal-minded intellectuals) and from journalists, such as E. Snow, that Mao deeply regretted the violence and the destruction of precious artifacts during the Cultural Revolution. Yet, Maoism[2] as a revolutionary creed of a newly established moral community was instrumental in creating an ethos in which collective violence was not only tacitly condoned but openly, explicitly, and vigorously encouraged.

MAOISM: MORAL COMMUNITY AND COLLECTIVE VIOLENCE

Despite a spate of books on Maoism, few attempts have been made to link its socio-logic to the tragic events that wove a complex and dreadful texture into the history of communism in China: the Anti-Rightist Campaign that brutally destroyed the intelligentsia by sending millions to the countryside, rendering the majority of the intellectuals déclassé for two decades; the "three hardship years" following the disastrous policy of the Great Leap Forward,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

which claimed as many as forty-three million lives, mainly due to starvation;[3] and the Cultural Revolution, which not only severely damaged the body politic but destroyed inestimable national cultural treasures in art, literature, and religion.[4] Among scholars of contemporary China, there is consensus that Mao himself was the single most important motivating force behind these events. The historical record (even the official account of the Chinese Communist Party) clearly shows that Mao personally initiated the "freedom of speech" campaign under the slogan "let one hundred schools bloom" in 1956, that he tenaciously mobilized the national effort to industrialize through the rapid increase of steel production in 1958, and that, against overwhelming odds, he incited the Red Guards to rebel against all authority. However, there is no serious effort to suggest that Mao's ability to exercise seemingly unlimited dictatorial power might have been, in a significant way, rooted in the persuasive power of the ideology itself.

David Apter and Tony Saich recently studied the Yan'an legacy by employing social theory constructs of discourse community, exegetical bonding, symbolic capital, and inversionary ideology. In their cultural critique, Mao is a master storyteller who ingeniously transforms himself from the narrator to the pivotal figure in modern China's collective narrative and thus defines the rules of the discourse, the terms for the exegesis, the parameters of the symbolic resources, and the main thrust of the ideology. They identified the critical period for the formation of Maoism to be from 1937 to 1942.[5] The story of Mao's rise to prominence in the Chinese Communist Party (CCP) is well known. Party historians have generally singled out the Zunyi Conference (1935) during the Long March as the critical event in Mao's emergence as the indisputable leader of the CCP, but it was in the loess caves of Yan'an that Mao built a stronghold where he could transform political leadership into ideological authority. How this nexus of political, moral, and cultural authority became a demonic force of destruction demands further explanation.

The well-documented and careful archival works by a coterie of conscientious scholars and journalists, notably Benjamin Schwartz, Liao Gailong, Stuart Schram, Li Rui, and Edgar Snow, have convincingly demonstrated that Mao's leadership was established by his ingenuity as a military strategist, fearlessness as a revolution-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ary, vision as a theoretician, persuasion as an ideologist, rapport with the peasant community, and charisma. His ability to win the support of an experienced general like Zhu De, outmaneuver a shrewd competitor like Zhang Guotao, and gain the loyalty of a seasoned intellectual like Zhou Enlai clearly indicates that Mao's ascendancy in the Chinese Communist movement was the result of many factors. This manifold assessment of Mao's strength provides a necessary background for an in-depth analysis of the sources of his authority, specifically his appeal to and manipulation of the intellectual community. Never in Chinese history have we observed such a combination of the ingenious use of symbolic power and outright anti-intellectualism. Mao's obsession with and contempt for the literati made him a nihilist with literary flair. The task of understanding his destructive power lies not only in a depiction of who he was and why he behaved as he did but also in an appreciation of what he symbolized, the people to whom he appealed for support, and the way he was able to have such a damaging effect.

It is difficult to ascertain how self-conscious Mao was that he was building a discourse community as the basis for his authority. His conscientious effort to make his own writings the core curriculum for the revolutionary movement seems to indicate that he had a great appreciation of the power of the pen. The essays "On Protracted War," "On Practice," and "On Contradiction" not only constituted the basic texts for the CCP, around which a host of exegetical readings derived their inspiration, but also justified the CCP's role as the embodiment of a sacred mission to "save the nation" (*jiuguo*). On the surface, the narrative was simple. The CCP, rather than the Nationalist government, had a comprehensive and practical strategy to deal with the Japanese aggression. By arousing the patriotic sentiments of the peasantry, who constituted 80 percent of the Chinese population, and organizing the Red Army into effective guerrilla fighters, Mao would render China militarily prepared to endure the protracted warfare necessitated by Japan's invasion.

The Long Marchers, having survived the most trying ordeal, were ready to save the nation. Underlying the narrative, the theme of violence looms large. Those who had endured the most devastating ordeal embodied the will to face up to the demonic force

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

from abroad. Those who could mobilize the property-less peasantry in a fierce struggle against the landlord class, furthermore, would reinvigorate the revolutionary power of the seemingly enfeebled Communists, enabling them eventually to prevail over the Nationalists. In Mao's mind, this message of violent struggle was encoded in nature as well:

> Mountains!
> Like great waves surging in a crashing sea,
> Like a thousand stallions
> In full gallop in the heat of battle.
>
> Mountains!
> Piercing the blue of heaven, your barbs unblunted!
> The skies would fall
> But for your strength supporting.[6]

Mao's appeal to the will of the Chinese people to overcome foreign belligerence and domestic incompetence resonated with the concern of intellectuals throughout China, including those in the base areas of the Nationalists. For the Nationalists in 1945, who had been besieged by Japanese forces and demoralized by protracted warfare for eight long years, the euphoria of victory was soon overshadowed by anxiety over inflation and military confrontation with the Communists. Mao's poem, a sort of self-identity, caused a stir in Chongqing literary circles when it was unofficially published upon completion of his negotiations with Chiang Kai-shek and after his departure from the Nationalist wartime capital:

> But alas! Qin Shihuang and Han Wudi
> Were lacking in literary grace,
> And Tang Taizhong and Song Taizu
> Had little poetry in their soul;
> And Genghis Khan,
> Proud Son of Heaven for a day,
> Knew only shooting eagles, bow outstretched.
> All are past and gone!
> For truly great men
> Look to this age alone.[7]

Mao's panoramic view of the four esteemed emperors and the terrifying Mongolian ruler in the imperial era evoked sensations of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

China's greatness and revealed a grandiose self-image, verging on megalomania, but the poem's distinct message was not merely personal ambition but the embodiment of China's destiny. To the literati, the key meaning inscribed in the poem was the reference to literary grace and poetic soul, a quality that Mao obviously claimed for himself but denied the founding fathers of great dynasties. For all that, there was more battle cry than aesthetic elegance in Mao's assertive voice.

Mao's deliberate attempt to establish himself as a member of the literati is well documented, but his ability to strike a sense of awe in sophisticated intellectuals through face-to-face communication and personal correspondence is yet to be fully studied. We have only begun to understand how his idiosyncratic self-assertion became deeply ingrained in the collective experience of the CCP and how it profoundly shaped the communal awareness of the Chinese intelligentsia as a whole. Mao characterized himself as beyond any belief in the evil spirits. This fearlessness must have appealed to many intellectuals who had already abandoned the life of the mind for political activism. It took decades for some of the most self-reflective of them to realize that their attraction to, if not genuine admiration for, Mao's unbridled recklessness may have significantly contributed to his charismatic power. An analysis of Mao's genre (*Mao wenti*), as an integral part of a long-term project to study Party culture (*dang wenhua*), was initiated by a group of dissident intellectuals after the Tiananmen tragedy of 1989. It is extremely difficult, especially for those who have been victimized, to think through the process by which a single individual assumed such demonic force and created such devastation; even with considerable hindsight it remains perplexing and mystifying.[8]

Paradoxically, Mao's demonic potency lay precisely in the deceptively simple vision—one person's wishful thinking disguised as the collective's prophetic insight—reflected by an ever-extending circle of Chinese:

> To Kunlun now I say,
> Neither all your height
> Nor all your snow is needed.
> Could I but draw my sword o'ertopping heaven,
> I'd cleave you in three:

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

One piece for Europe,
One for America,
One to keep in the East.
Peace would then reign over the world,
The same warmth and cold throughout the globe.[9]

Especially noteworthy is the fact that this poem was composed toward the end of the Long March, literally "on horseback," when "Mao had crossed twenty-four rivers and eighteen mountain ranges, in weather now tropical and now frigid. He had arrived in the loess country of the northwest with only 10 percent of the troops [his First Front Army, which made up about one-quarter of the Long Marchers, dwindled from thirty thousand to three thousand] who had left Jiangxi one year before."[10] What Mao envisioned then was China's rightful place in his perception of a just world.

It is remarkable that a man with limited formal education from remote Shaoshanchong in Hunan, who learned about Kang Youwei and Liang Qichao's reformism in his teens, and who first saw a map of the world at nineteen, felt ready to embark on a journey to save China. It is equally remarkable that this fiercely competitive and blatantly presumptuous youth, with the social experience of "struggle" and hatred, revenge and contempt, became the embodiment of a master narrative: the liberation of the Chinese people from poverty and ignorance. It is even more remarkable that this dreamer of destructive visions, imbued with a strong dose of revolutionary romanticism, has been regarded by his millions of followers, including sophisticated intellectuals trained in Western Europe and North America, as China's savior for half a century.

Referring to "the official founding of the CCP [that] occurred in late July and early August of 1921" as a "dramatic episode," David Apter, with his focus on Yan'an as Mao's "simulacrum," comments on the rise of Mao:

> This episode, the spy, the water, the dangerous terrain, the trials, and tasks are conditions for Mao's own story of coming to power. It is a tale of overcoming in which not only does he defeat his enemies despite serious setbacks, he overcomes his ignorance of Marxism to triumph over those Russian-trained adepts who represented themselves as the real Marxist intellectuals. His story is also about the evolution of his thoughts.[11]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Mao's ability to condense the stories of the decline and fall of China, the conflict of the CCP with the Nationalists, and his own struggle within the Party into an "epic, drama, and passion play" helped him "to deposit much mystique in a common fund." As Apter notes,

> Each [of the three stories] offers a different resonance adding layers of symbolic intensity to Yan'an as a simulacrum. Each is received in speeches, used to illustrate texts. Running through them is a common theme, embodied and embellished by "political yearning."[12]

The emergence of Maoism as the radical ideology, the rise of Mao as the revolutionary leader, the establishment of the CCP as the institutional vanguard for the struggle, and the triumph of Marxism-Leninism as the guiding principle in China's quest for a modernizing strategy are integral parts of a master narrative that forged a discourse community. The network of moral and affective relations began with a tiny minority of peasant warriors and idealist youth in the caves of Yan'an and, in less than a decade, wore its way into the collective imagination of the Chinese people, who affirmed it as the bearer of the Mandate of Heaven leading China toward the brave new world. Official CCP historians insist that the Marxist-Leninist dialectic of historical inevitability, the Party's indigenization of the anti-imperialist struggle through the experience of the Long March, Mao's leadership by exemplary teaching, and the wisdom of Maoism as a source of inspiration are essential factors in this incredible historical transformation. Mao himself believed that the Communists' ability to concentrate on the war with the Japanese as the overriding task of the Yan'an decade earned them the right to govern China. In his view, the Long March was the authenticating cultural event for the inevitable confrontation:

> The sky is high, the clouds are pale.
> We watch the wild geese flying south till they vanish;
> If we reach not the Great Wall, we are no true men!
> Already we have come two thousand leagues.
>
> High on the crest of Liu Pan Mountains
> Our banners idly wave in the west wind.
> Today we hold the long cord in our hands;
> When shall we bind fast the gray dragon?[13]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

A critical examination of China's modern transformation may reveal that Marxism-Leninism was but one of the modernizing strategies and a highly ineffective choice at that; that the Long March was a desperate escape from Chiang Kai-shek's encirclements; that the bulk of the pressures of Japanese aggression (symbolized by the "gray dragon" in Mao's poem) was borne by the Nationalists; that Mao's leadership was only a contributory factor in the success of the CCP as the challenger of the Nationalist mandate; and that Maoism was not a coherent doctrine guiding the praxis of the revolution. The confrontation between the CCP and the Nationalists (1945–1949), involving massive military maneuvers, moreover, was decided on the battlefields rather than on the ideological front. No matter. On October 1, 1949, when Mao declared the founding of the People's Republic, proclaiming that "the Chinese people have stood up," liberal-democratic intellectuals as well as his CCP colleagues perceived him as the actualization of a national dream. The dreamer had become the embodiment of China's destiny; the past had authenticated the vision for the future. Individual experience became collective experience; idiosyncratic expression became cultural representation. Now the symbolic stuff of local illusion would be catalyzed into the collective emotions of traumatic social reality.

FROM CULTURAL MOVEMENT THROUGH INVERSIONARY IDEOLOGY TO SOCIAL TERROR

In September 1989, three American centers for Chinese studies (Berkeley, Harvard, and Michigan) sponsored a conference to mark four anniversaries: the French Revolution (1789), the Opium War (1939), the May Fourth Movement (1919), and the founding of the People's Republic (1949). Although the Tiananmen massacre on June 4 of that year loomed large in the minds of the participants, the evocation of memories of the four previous events helped to put China's tragic history of modern transformation in perspective. Indeed, it was the Enlightenment mentality exemplified by the revolutionary spirit of the French, as contrasted with the skepticism and empiricism of the English Enlightenment, that dominated the intellectual discourse of the May Fourth generation. It was, however, the vortex generated by the seemingly con-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tradictory forces of an iconoclastic attack on the Confucian tradition and an impassioned commitment to the revitalization of China as a race, a civilization, and a unified polity that overwhelmed the hearts and minds of the May Fourth Chinese intelligentsia. Virtually every youth of "blood and vital energy" was sucked into this vortex: anxiety, impatience, rebelliousness, and engagement characterized the ethos. Mao, like the "enlightened" youth of his generation, was exposed to the writings of Adam Smith, Herbert Spencer, John Stuart Mill, and Darwin through Yan Fu's masterly translations, but it was in Rousseau's critique of culture, advocacy of an intimate community, and idea of the "general will" that Mao found a kindred spirit.

The acute awareness that, in less than half a century, the proud Middle Kingdom had been brought to its knees, as a semicolonial country humiliated by unequal treaties and carved up by the spheres of influence, made all educated Chinese "nationalist" in ethnicity, culture, and polity. The sense of crisis prompted by Japan's miraculous ascendancy as a full-fledged imperialist power in less than one generation and, as a result, her grave threat to China's existence compelled intellectual forces of all persuasions to take "save the nation" as the common denominator. Understandably, the overriding concern of the May Fourth generation was the preservation of the Chinese nation and the Chinese race (*baoguo baozhong*). The extreme conservatives and the radical revolutionaries shared the same burning desire to make China stand on her own feet. There was a compelling reason why Marxism-Leninism, rather than American pragmatism, German idealism, British empiricism, or French rationalism, emerged as the ideology for China's modernization: the success of the Russian revolution in 1917 and the attraction of the subsequent China policies of the USSR. The CCP's propaganda machinery played a critical role in this ideological turn. Nevertheless, we must not underestimate the vortex mentioned above that attuned the Chinese ear to the Marxist-Leninist message: it was Western to the core, and, at the same time, it was thoroughly anti-Western imperialism. In other words, it had the potential of smashing the two mountains blocking China's path toward modernity: feudalism and imperialism.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Underlying this rhetoric was the famous slogan of May Fourth that only Mr. Sai (Science) and Mr. De (Democracy) could save China. The advocacy of science and democracy as true manifestations of the Enlightenment symbolized a broad consensus of the Chinese intelligentsia.[14] With a few notable exceptions, they strongly believed that the mobilization of all the energies of the Chinese people, based on a comprehensive vision of social reconstruction, was the necessary and most economical way to save China. The absence of other Enlightenment values, such as liberty, the dignity of the individual, private property, privacy, human rights, and due process of law, occasionally stirred the more refined scholarly minds, but most intellectuals were satisfied with the simplicity and neatness of the agenda. For eighty years, the sanctity of science and democracy has never been questioned. Neither the CCP nor its most severe critics ever raised any doubts about it. It was not an accident that the likeness of the Statue of Liberty that appeared in Tiananmen Square was rechristened the Goddess of Democracy. Party ideologists have condemned liberalization as a form of spiritual pollution and human rights as alien to Chinese tradition, but they have never criticized democracy. Understandably, Mao's doctrine of "New Democracy" had thousands of patriotic intellectuals mesmerized.

Lurking behind the scenes, however, was neither science nor democracy but scientism and populism. Strictly speaking, instrumental rationality and Jacobin-like collectivism fundamentally restructured the Chinese intellectual world in the post-May Fourth period. The rich diversity of symbolic resources, characteristic of the cultural scene at the turn of the century, was gradually stylized into a dichotomous mode of thinking: progressive/regressive, revolutionary/reactionary, proletarian/bourgeois, true/false, beautiful/ugly, and good/evil. These intellectual debates continued in the Nationalist period (1927–1949). Issues pertaining to China's modernization, centering on cultural identity, Westernization, capitalism, socialism, industrialization, and a host of other problem areas, were widely debated in academic circles. Intellectual sophistication was high and many presented thoughtful recommendations for optimizing resources available to China in her modern transformation. On the whole, however, it was revolutionary praxis,

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the concrete procedure by which ideas were translated into institutionalized action, that claimed the most attention.

While Hu Shi and other Western-trained scholars, under the sponsorship of the Nationalist government, turned their attention to academic pursuits in the name of "sorting out and sifting our national heritage" (*zhengli guogu*), the "progressive" intellectuals, obsessed with the belief that orthodoxy naturally leads to orthopraxy, were fully engaged in determining the nature of Chinese society, expanding the cultural capital for socialist reconstruction, appropriating symbolic resources for the revolutionary cause, and empowering an increasing number to actively participate to save the nation. By the end of 1937, specifically after the Xian incident (1936) when the CCP and the Nationalists ostensibly combined forces in a holy war against Japan, the leftist turn of the Chinese intelligentsia seemed inevitable. This significantly enhanced Mao's prestige not only as a military strategist but also as a revolutionary theorist.

Mao's contempt for Western-trained scholars and his genuine affection for the peasants made him a distinguished populist who, especially in the eyes of the intellectuals, seemed to have gained privileged access to the peasant mentality. The youthful Mao chose to stay home because he did not believe that the key to China's future lay in the West or, for that matter, in Russia. His nativism, carefully cultivated by his focused investigations into peasant conditions, served him well as a nationalist. Yet, although he harbored strong anti-imperialist sentiments, he does not seem to have been xenophobic. His admiration for Lu Xun and his companionship with the literatus Guo Moruo, both returned students from Japan, his association with Zhou Enlai and Deng Xiaoping, who had both spent considerable time in France, and his friendship with the American journalist Edgar Snow indicated that he could choose not to function in an enclosed, nativistic, symbolic universe. Although he preferred to read dynastic history, traditional novels, and classical poetry, he studied Marxism-Leninism with utter seriousness and taught himself to read English documents with the aid of a dictionary. He led a deceptively simple life; he seems to have deliberately cultivated an image of rusticity. Recent stories about his sexual appetite may have seriously tarnished his integrity as an incorruptible revolutionary, but those

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

who were intimately familiar with his life-style saw him neither as majestic nor luxurious but down-to-earth. This, of course, does not mean that he was not excessive in squandering national resources. The maintenance of his several resorts was extremely costly and his unpredictable and frequent inspection tours by train, with a huge entourage, are only a sample of his many extravagances. Nevertheless, as a ferocious reader, a captivating poet, and an idiosyncratic calligrapher, his stature as a literatus has never been seriously questioned. How could this seemingly innocuous poet, strategist, theorist, and dreamer become an engine of destruction and the source of the most heinous atrocities in Chinese history?

According to the memoirs of several victims of the Anti-Rightist Campaign, few ever challenged the verdicts of the Party, nor did anyone voice doubts about the supreme wisdom of Mao, the Helmsman. We may easily condemn this passivity and acquiescence as political blindness or outright cowardice, but case after case suggests that guilt, self-criticism, and sacrifice were such powerful mitigating sentiments that even hatred and a sense of injustice were not allowed to surface. Are the brainwashing techniques or the mechanics of psychological totalism mainly responsible for this incredible art of silencing? The absence of a well-coordinated state machinery as a disciplinary agency, the highly decentralized method of coercion, and the pervasive voluntarism of the victims as well as the victimizers suggest that the terror that the Helmsman inflicted upon millions of intellectuals was, in Lu Xun's terminology, caused by an invisible "soft knife" that cuts so deeply that society as a whole, rather than any individual, bleeds. To put it differently, no matter how many cases we can identify, the cumulative experience of individual suffering pales by comparison with the damage done to the "collective consciousness." This was the deepest layer of social suffering. Since the primacy of the "general will" demands that, at a critical juncture in China's development, any vicious attacks on the Party, irresponsible criticisms of the government, subversive remarks about the leadership, or simply idle talk will be extremely harmful to the well-being of the people, the silencing of a tiny minority is not only justifiable but necessary.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The treatment of a tiny minority, let us say 5 percent, was a large enough quota to silence the entire Chinese intelligentsia. Mao's theory of contradiction, conveniently adapted to the contingency, turned those who, in other political contexts, could be easily accommodated as members of the loyal opposition into enemies of the people. The contradictions within the people and between the people and their enemies were interpreted as radically different forms of social tension; the former was healthy and reconcilable but the latter was destructive and irreconcilable. Mao's strategy to save the Party, its leadership, and, above all, his authority worked at the expense of an entire generation of liberal-minded (including quite a few Communist) intellectuals. There was physical coercion, public humiliation, and emotional torture. Many "rightists" survived the ordeal and were "rehabilitated" in the post-Cultural Revolution period; some of them even assumed leadership positions in the Party, government, mass media, academia, and the arts.

The institutional mechanism that enabled such a massive campaign to take place at all levels of society was the work unit system (*danwei*). Scientism and populism were clearly the rationale behind the implementation of such a system. The most efficient way for China to mobilize all of her energy for socialist construction was a comprehensively planned and fully integrated structure, significantly departing from the existing organizations. Or, alternatively, in order to ensure that the newly established infrastructure would enhance rather than impede the inevitable historical process of actualizing the Communist ideas of equality and distributive justice, all existing institutions must be thoroughly modified. Lurking behind this apparent effort at social engineering was the totalistic will to control and an intense fear that charisma, the impulse to change, to deconstruct, and to reorganize, could become routinized.

Guided by instrumental rationality, at least on the surface, although the morally authenticating experiences of the Long March and of Yan'an never ceased to animate the new style of control, Mao, as a strategist, urged his colleagues to put aside the things they knew well and to learn the institutional imperatives of running a modern bureaucracy from experienced leaders in urban centers (i.e., Beijing, Tianjin, and Shanghai). Yet, Mao time and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

again deliberately and ostensibly ignored the institutional imperatives and ruthlessly undermined the rules of the game in running a modern bureaucracy. Furthermore, the leadership of the CCP, not to mention the authority of its core members and, by implication, of Mao himself, was to be protected and defended at all costs. The demand for populism, however, compelled Mao to accept, implicitly if not publicly, that performance criteria, a sort of accountability if not transparency of governance, would have to be applied to evaluate all cadres, himself included. The very fact that each of the members of the CCP, including the leadership core, was incorporated in the unit system, with a permanent file that included his or her class background, education, information about personal matters such as marital status, conduct, attitudes, beliefs, and so forth, indicates that a process of atomization was superimposed upon the entire society. Actually, a grave consequence of this arrangement was that, in theory and practice, every member of the society was susceptible to the disciplinary mechanism of the regime. This level of vulnerability and the deep fear it evoked bound the society and its various subgroups, including the cadres, together.

What Mao created, as an ingenious response to the post-1949 situation, was more a cultural "process" than a social "structure" of control, with the specific purpose of mass mobilization for socialist construction. It was not a Stalinist totalitarianism because the dynamism, though initiated by directives from above, was often fueled by enthusiastic voluntarism from below. Without the overwhelming consensus of the "general will," the major campaigns launched in the 1950s could not have exerted such devastation over the existing social structure. China's stunning performance in the Korean War (December 1950), using over seven hundred thousand "volunteers," including Mao's son, who died in the conflict, barely a year after the bloody struggle with the Nationalists, testified to Mao's charismatic manipulation of the patriotic sentiments of the Chinese people. They seemed more eager than ever to commit China on a march toward the brave new world.

The willingness, indeed commitment, to discord, conflict, contradiction, struggle, and destruction engendered a mentality evoking, most of all, the Hegelian "negative will," a will determined to destroy systematically and thoroughly, if only as a precondition

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

for reconstruction. In the perspective of the Confucian discourse, characterized by the ethos of harmony, reconciliation, negotiation, shareability, and consensus, which, in theory and practice, has been the cultural tradition of the Chinese intelligentsia, the Maoists must answer the following questions: "How much bloodshed and physical violence are they ready to accept as a price to be paid for social 'progress' and the pursuit of self-assertion (by individuals and groups)? Where does one draw the line between useful discord and destructive violence—and how can one insure that favoring the former does not inevitably entail privileging the latter?"[15] As Maoist China was continuously rent by bloody conflicts between divergent ideological groups, with profoundly devastating consequences for "organic solidarity" at all levels of society, Maoists seem to contend that there is no limit to bloodshed and, as far as destructive violence is concerned, there is no need to draw the line. As forged by a rebellious peasantry, the Marxist theory of "class struggle," and the conviction that "political power grows out of the barrel of the gun,"[16] inherent in Maoism is a fundamental propensity toward deconstruction.

Mao, in an oblique reference to Kang Youwei's failure to bring about the "Great Harmony" (*datong*) through reform, expressed confidently that the Communist utopia was attainable by his revolution led by the working class.[17] A clear demonstration of Mao's revolutionary romanticism was his "land reform" (1951–1953) program. The brutal simplicity with which a whole class of landlords was indiscriminately humiliated, coerced, and destroyed made Mao a hero, indeed a savior, among numerous newly possessed families. A similar leveling process, effectively put into practice with the cathartic "struggle sessions" in the countryside, was carried out in the urban areas, with less theatrics but no less brutality, against the capitalists and the petty bourgeoisie. By the time Mao launched the Hundred Flowers campaign, an obvious response to the liberal-democratic movements in Eastern Europe, notably Hungary, the intellectuals who voiced discontent strongly believed that they were involved in a style of internal criticism for the sake of the CCP. Given the long, bitter fate that many of them endured as a consequence, their actions might appear to be naive. But Mao's punishment was extreme, and the seeming irrationality of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the violence was rooted in a sharp conflict between Mao's utopian vision and the intellectuals' liberal-democratic aspirations.

The discourse community that Mao thought he had already forged was based on his experiential understanding of protracted war, practice, and contradiction. With the end of the Korean War, which considerably enhanced his prestige in the Communist bloc, and the "success" of land reform, which made him a godlike provider, he felt totally confident in allowing the intellectuals to openly and freely express their opinions on the state of the nation. To his astonishment, their frank criticism undermined the achievements of the CCP and challenged the legitimacy of his own authority. The intellectuals, in fact, subscribed to a radically different vision of society (for instance, a multiparty democratic polity with regular elections and guarantees of rights and liberties). Their underlying value orientation, liberal-democratic in nature, stressed gradualism, negotiation, coordination, compromise, and harmony. While many of Mao's colleagues were astonished by the outburst of intellectual dynamism, the Helmsman decided to steer the state into the turbulent waters of class struggle. Fearing that his utopian vision was seriously blurred by what he would, with complete vindictiveness, call the poisonous ideas of the intellectuals, he enjoined the country to refocus its attention on the socialist path.

A logical consequence of this reorientation was the marginalization of the intelligentsia, from the status of active participants or sympathetic observers to that of spoilers, indeed "enemies of the people." Those who were labeled "rightists" were immediately marginalized, alienated not only from the masses, but from other intellectuals and from their own immediate families as well. Family members were urged, often under great pressure from relatives and friends, to draw a clear line of demarcation between themselves and the targets. Furthermore, as the campaign gathered momentum, those, including spouses and children, who showed even the slightest sympathy toward such enemies of the people would suffer severe punishment for their inability to commit themselves to the right path. Once the Rightists were condemned as the "radical other," a process of "pseudospeciation," to use Erik Erikson's term, was underway. The psychopathological condemnation of the Rightists as nonpeople not only denied them any status in society but also robbed them of any dignity or decency as

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

fellow human beings. As a result, they were reduced to subhumans and no longer existed as members of the same species. Thus, the inversionary "speciation" that made them less ("pseudo") human justified any maltreatment of them.

Millions were victimized by this kind of "soft knife" procedure, which was perceived by the victimizers as a necessary sacrifice for maintaining the purity of the socialist spirit. Mao's own exemplary teaching was a necessary precondition for this procedure to function with the kind of voluntarism it engendered. While Confucian teaching takes, as a point of departure, the bonding affection between parent and child for moral development, Maoists purposefully drove a wedge into the sacred relationships (i.e., parent-child, husband-wife, siblings, and friends) as a litmus test for loyalty to the socialist cause. The bellicose nature of Maoist thinking lies in its determination to bear the unbearable in such a way that sympathy, defined in Confucian terms as "the inability to bear the suffering of others," was condemned as the weakness of the will. The inversion of Confucian values would simultaneously defeat individualism and undermine the moral resources available to make despair meaningful. Once basic human feelings, such as loving and caring for the closest kin, were strongly criticized as petty bourgeois sentimentalism and publicly denounced as incongruous with the revolutionary spirit, they lost their legitimacy in the court of appeal of the newly constituted discourse community. It created cultural suffering by inverting the symbolic capital of the individual experience of suffering.

Especially noteworthy is the total asymmetry between the confession of guilt by the victims and the self-righteousness of the victimizers. Not only did the intellectuals who had undeservedly suffered the most demeaning maltreatment acknowledge a sense of guilt for their failure to live up to the communal standards set up by the CCP because of their class background, socialization, education, or lack of commitment, they also willingly forgave those who were the disciplining agents of the state. By contrast, no prominent victimizer was ever brought to trial even for the slightest misdemeanor. The Party, which finally decided to "rehabilitate" the victims more than twenty years later, after Mao had died and his Red Guards had deconstructed the Party leadership, made almost no attempt to bring charges against the victimizers, with

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the notable exception of the so-called "Gang of Four," who can hardly be classified, by any stretch of the imagination, as victims. Mao of course never acknowledged any wrongdoing in this regard.

Is it conceivable that an important reason for the massive social suffering was the consensus of the discourse community, by choice and by default, that Maoism was self-evidently true and inherently practicable? In retrospect, it is preposterous and uncanny to retrace the steps, whether real or imagined, that eventually led to the holocaust of the Cultural Revolution in which even the victimizers were pitiful mockeries of their professed idealism and heroism. For a decade (1966–1976), intra-party conflict aside, the entire society was embroiled in a struggle crudely defined in terms of the two lines: socialist/capitalist, progressive/reactionary, leftist/rightist, native/foreign, new/old, selfless/selfish, and good/bad. While in any concrete situation neat categories are inevitably mixed, what Maoism initially symbolized to the Red Guards was, however, a clear message: the socialist path, progressive polity, leftist ideology, native method, new vision, selfless leadership, and good people; a clear break from the feudal past, bureaucratism, elitism, privilege, and corruption as practiced by the capitalist-roaders.

The special shape of social suffering as forged by Maoism is inconceivable without reference to the persuasive power of the rhetoric of the discourse community. There was no alternative intelligence anywhere to compete with the Maoist claims. There was no autonomous intelligentsia, critical mass media, or independent business community; in short, there was no civil society. Nor was there any "public discussion" similar to that conducted by the powerful and influential scholar-officials in traditional China. As the common sense of civility practiced in interpersonal relationships, so characteristic of premodern Chinese society, was gradually eroded by the new cultural movements and frontally assaulted by the revolutionary spirit, there was no defense against the linguistic violence of reducing the richly textured ritual of human interaction into a black/white struggle for survival. Despite the folk belief in human decency, which is rooted in the Mencian teaching of humanity as commiseration, the base instincts of self-preservation, aggression, jealousy, and domination overwhelmed the emotional life of the Chinese for years. The Red Guards were

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

instinct with life and destruction; Maoism provided the rationale. It took the discourse community several decades to incubate the monster that seemed to provide the only solution to China's grave problems.

The assumptive reasons behind this are deceptively simple: *1)* At this particular juncture in Chinese history, with imperialist threats without and enemies of the people within, mass mobilization is necessary for socialist reconstruction. *2)* The Long March, the Yan'an experiment, the bitter struggle with the Japanese, and the bloody confrontation with the Nationalists may have helped China to become unified, and the Korean War may have demonstrated China's resolve as an independent nation, but China is still "poor and blank." Personal sacrifice is required for China truly to stand up to Russia, Europe, and America. *3)* The CCP, as the agency for carrying out the "general will" of the people, is always the party of the peasant, worker, and soldier. There is no presumption that the CCP can ever be incorruptible. In fact, it is openly acknowledged that routinized bureaucracy and built-in elitism have already undermined its effectiveness. The CCP has to continuously renew itself to deserve the support of the masses. *4)* The intelligentsia could become an integral part of this joint venture to bring about a truly socialist China if it were determined to free itself from the corrosive habits that make it vulnerable to the pull of feudalism and the push of capitalism. *5)* Since only through praxis do we learn to align ourselves with the objective social forces generated by the dynamism of the masses, we must take "class struggle" seriously, not only in behavior, but also in attitude and belief. *6)* We must have faith in the transformative potential of the people. Since human determination will prevail over Heaven (*rendingshengtian*), we can rely upon the activism of the masses for socialist reconstruction. *7)* Maoism, as embodied in the revolutionary experience of the Party and the supreme ideological insight of Mao himself, serves as the best guide for China's socialist transformation.

Surprisingly, the disastrous Great Leap Forward and the even more devastating Cultural Revolution followed the same deceptively simple logic: contradiction, social practice, mass line, class struggle, and continuous revolution.[18] To be sure, it was not in its abstract universalism but in its lived concreteness that Maoism

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

exercised its sinister power. Whether or not a sophisticated intellectual could bring himself or herself to appreciate fully its philosophical elegance (there was little of this in Mao's word or deed), the force of the Maoist persuasion to conquer and subdue, if not to convince, was irresistible. Formidable minds may have tried to resist—in the case of Liang Shuming by direct confrontation and in the case of Feng Youlan by accommodation—but they were either silenced or co-opted when Mao, the thinker, assumed the role of teacher and leader. Willingness to abandon one's own philosophical stance in the face of a Maoist challenge may seem to have been an inevitable consequence of the social dynamics of a culture of terror, but, time and again, we witness a dramatic turnabout, reminiscent of religious conversion, continuously reenacted by some of the most brilliant (and betrayed) professional intellectuals. The truthfulness of the Maoist vision was complemented and supplemented by numerous acts of "exegetical bonding," a kind of hermeneutic investment in a fund of knowledge, which enhanced its persuasive power through reenacting the ritual of coordinated reading and repeating the rhetoric of assent; as a result, the story became so deeply ingrained in the communal self-awareness of the Chinese intelligentsia that to deviate from it caused a profound reflexive anxiety, moral panic.

The recent attempt to characterize Mao's nativism as no more than a reflection of his cherished dream to become an imperial Chinese emperor seriously misreads the record. However, it is undeniable that Mao jealously guarded his "imperialist" power against any competing authority and that he resisted all efforts to routinize his charisma, for fear that his infallibility would be compromised as a result. Most intimate accounts of Mao's private life convey an image of deceptive simplicity and fabricated rusticity. Mao's life as the leader of the People's Republic seems devoid of any elaborate ritual or even of any modest ceremony: he seems to have been attached to his old pajamas and worn-out blanket with a sort of infantile possessiveness; he ate plainly and led a style of life that was, by imperial standards, devoid of elegance and nicety. He was immersed in books and often conducted official business in his study, bedroom, or even in bed. He suffered from chronic insomnia and preferred to stay up late and sleep in the morning. He seemed to have had an insatiable sexual appetite, but

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

his indulgence was neither elaborate nor debauched. He does not seem to have acquired expensive tastes. His fondness of fatty pork, his addiction to sleeping pills, his fascination with the art of the "inner chamber" (Taoist sexual practices), his aversion to bathing, and his refusal to brush his teeth (claiming that tigers do not brush their teeth either) made him special but not necessarily perverse. Even his physician, who was the source of the stories of such indulgences, describes him as a simple and rustic "peasant."[19]

THE THREE SOURCES OF MAOIST VIOLENCE

What was neither simple nor rustic was his power to terrorize, to dominate, to break people, to conjure old hatreds and animate new ones, and to destroy. Ironically, Mao's sinister power lay in his ability to combine three powers into one inseparable unity: political leadership, ideological legitimacy, and moral authority. The prophetic voice in his poem that his literary talents surpassed the four esteemed founding emperors and made the terrifying Mongolian ruler appear to be a mere hunter resonated well with his presumed self-image: a military strategist without the need to carry a gun, a political leader who transcended bureaucracy, a teacher who received little formal education, and a theorist who derived all of his ideas from practice.

Had Mao actually wanted to be an emperor, he would have inflicted less social suffering upon the Chinese people. The damage would have been confined to the political arena, no matter how broadly defined. At least the Chinese moral spirit, as it was cultivated and preserved in the collective experience of the intelligentsia, would not have been so humiliatingly injured. It was his ambition to become more than a mere emperor, fueled by a fierce arrogance that only he knew what was really good for China, that made him into something even more terrifying than the imperial dragons of China's past: a hard-hearted, self-righteous monster.

Ironically, the trinity embodied in Mao, reminiscent of the highest ideal in Confucian rulership (the sage-king), is unprecedented in Chinese history. I have only hinted at the process by which Mao assumed not only political leadership but also ideological legitimacy and moral authority. The story is complex because it involves the struggle of modern China as a race, a polity, and a

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

civilization, the struggle of the CCP as an idea, an institution, and as the steward of a mission, and the struggle of Mao as a strategist, a dreamer, and a destroyer. Moreover, it involves the intellectuals, landlords, peasants, capitalists, workers, soldiers, cadres, and a host of other variously classified "bad elements," "counterrevolutionaries," "reactionaries," and "nonpeople."

An often neglected dimension of the narrative is the symbolic capital that Mao deliberately manipulated or unconsciously inherited that gave him inestimable purchasing power over the life of the mind. Given the economic backwardness and political impotence of modern Chinese society, the available cultural resources were essential for any mass mobilization for the revolutionary cause. In traditional China, political leadership, ideological legitimacy, and moral authority were closely intertwined but separable in theory and practice. No emperor ever managed to extend his political power fully into the ideological and moral arenas. These were the province of the scholar-officials, dictated by a set of significantly different rules of the game. The Manchu emperors, notably Kangxi, Yongzheng, and Qianlong, worked hard to achieve "sage-king" status. Kangxi's gallant effort pacified threatening Ming loyalist movements and won the tacit support of the literati class, but he basically styled himself as a devoted student of Confucian culture. Yongzheng's concerted effort to appropriate ideological legitimacy struck terror among the educated, but he was not himself a source of inspiration for the scholars. Qianlong successfully established himself as a fellow literatus and was greatly admired for his martial and literary accomplishments, but he was neither an ideologue nor an exemplar.

There were quite a few strong rulers in the dynastic history: Qin Shihuang and Han Wudi's power in shaping the polity and Tang Taizhong and Song Taizu's influence over the bureaucracy made them model emperors of "great talent and bold vision" (*xiongcaidalue*). Yet, the majority of Chinese emperors were themselves victims of an elaborate ritual system with innumerable rules and regulations to ensure a routinized and harmonized form of life. This was perhaps the reason why, contrary to popular belief, a typical profile of the Chinese emperor might very well include incompetence, weakness, youth, and lack of power. Understandably, while there were plenty of mediocre rulers surrounded by

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

corrupt eunuchs and in-laws, there were few tyrannical despots in traditional Chinese history. Even though the symbolic system of the sage-king ideal continued to be a source of inspiration for the scholar-officials, their effort to make the king sagely was an endless task and they never confused what the emperor really was with what he ought to become. Indeed, the separation between his personality and his position enabled the scholar-officials to develop a functioning "feedback" mechanism within the bureaucracy that constituted a de facto loyal opposition not only to the powerful ministers but also to the "inner court" and the emperor himself.

Surely, the absence of the separation of church and state did not allow Chinese political culture to develop a symbolically and practically consequential priesthood, but the assumption that the Chinese emperor was, in reality, a combination of king and Pope and was therefore virtually infallible is one-sided, if not outright false. The other side of the story is that the scholar-official class, by combining the roles of cultural interpreters, transmitters, and creators with those of policy initiators, implementers, and evaluators, was much more influential than the priesthood could ever be in defining the order of things in the empire. If we broaden the category of the scholar-official class to include what was in the later imperial period often referred to as the "local gentry," as we must when we analyze Chinese society as a whole, we may very well talk about a group in actual control of ideological legitimacy and moral authority. Zeng Guofan may have been an exception in his combination of ideological legitimacy and moral authority with military might; his role as a governor, charged with the mission of suppressing the Taiping Rebellion, gave him an unusual mandate to save the dynasty, but, true to the pattern of traditional Chinese political culture before the rise of Mao, no political leader fully embodied ideological legitimacy and moral authority. Sun Yat-sen was too marginal to the cultural center to assume such a role and Chiang Kai-shek never transcended his own iron cage, "the generalissimo."

Notwithstanding Mao's early decision to cast his lot with the peasantry, it was his success in capturing the hearts and minds of the intelligentsia that bestowed upon him the charisma needed for his mass mobilization. This is not to say that in assessing the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

effectiveness of Maoism as a revolutionary ideology, the intelligentsia rather than the peasantry played the pivotal role. Rather, Mao's proven ability to arouse peasant nationalism and to transform many tillers of the land into guerrilla fighters and active participants in the revolutionary process through socialist education was a precondition for persuading the intelligentsia that he meant what he said and that through actual praxis his words carried a meaning that was authentic. Mao's literary talent, which was not widely known until 1946, was a happy surprise to the leftist intellectuals and became irresistible to those cultural conservatives who were seasoned in classical literature. If Mao's experience in the Long March and Yan'an alienated him from his fellow intellectuals, his immersion in traditional Chinese literary works made him a familiar face, indeed a kindred spirit. Ironically, Mao's radical otherness, especially his identification with the poor peasants, turned out to be a liberating message for the concerned intellectuals.

The Chinese intelligentsia seemed to have been well disposed to populist sentiments, having been educated in the Confucian tradition that the people are the root of politics, and agriculture is the root of the economy. If the people are not aroused, no effective political action is really possible, and if agriculture is in trouble, the economy necessarily suffers. The peasantry is the key to social stability and, by implication, to a truly revolutionary transformation of society. Underlying this glorification of the transformative potential of the Chinese people is a deep-rooted conviction that since "Heaven sees through the eyes of the people and hears through the ears of the people,"[20] the united will of the people, like the flood, cannot be stopped. The myth of Yu, the Chinese counterpart to the story of Noah, clearly shows that self-sacrifice, group discipline, hard work, patience, charismatic leadership, mass mobilization, and the right technology can channel a devastating flood into productive irrigation. Mao's favorite allegory, "The Foolish Old Man Who Moved the Mountains" (*Yugong yishan*), ingrained in the Chinese collective consciousness as the proper "modern" way of transforming China into a socialist utopia, is a simplified version of the same myth. No intellectual, individually or communally, could challenge the authenticity of this Maoist

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

vision, for it had become an essential dimension of the whole enterprise.

It was the fusion of scientism, an aggressive anthropocentrism, and populism, the myth of the general will, that made Maoism an explosive transformative ideology. All sacred symbolic mechanisms of control—the Mandate of Heaven, the ritual of ancestral veneration, the sanctity of the land, the harmonizing patterns of the four seasons, the dignity of the religious rites in honoring spirits and ghosts, and the intrinsic values of learning—were either relegated to the background or ruthlessly secularized. Dialectic materialism, as the new orthodoxy, rendered all forms of spirituality, especially the organized religions, futile and illegitimate. Paradoxically, however, the seemingly secularized Maoism was a fertile ground for all sorts of sentiments, including highly charged ethnic, linguistic, territorial, gender, and religious emotions, to express themselves. The Maoist romantic utopianism took on millenarian and evangelical overtones during the Cultural Revolution. As the relative historical revolution became absolutized into a project of universal salvation, the messengers (the Red Guards) condemned those who failed to share their vision as "monsters and demons" (*niugui-sheshen*), a category worse than miserable sinners and hateful heathens. The deification of Mao himself provided an ironic twist to the whole process: the man who insisted that he did not believe in negative cosmic forces (*buxinxie*), and thus could never be haunted by ghosts, became the most fearful and perverse "evil spirit" in Chinese history.

THE FORMS OF SOCIAL SUFFERING FROM MAOISM

The three capital events of social suffering in the People's Republic—the Anti-Rightist Campaign, the massive starvation as a result of the Great Leap Forward, and the Cultural Revolution—were all closely connected to Mao's policies based on his utopian vision. Although they differed remarkably in terms of other causes and circumstances, the presence of Maoism (the inversionary ideology) as a key factor is undeniable.

The most obvious type of social suffering attributable to Maoism is the brutality against individuals, prompted by an ideological zealotry to be correct, pure, and totally uncompromising. The

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

intense hatred of the enemy (landlord, capitalist, reactionary, bourgeois, nationalist agent, or imperialist spy) led to torture, murder, and even cannibalism. The psychopathology of treating those condemned to be counterrevolutionaries as subhuman, deserving no sympathy whatsoever, created an inversionary process of reducing one's closest kin to radical otherness. Among the youth with dubious class backgrounds (including virtually all members of the intelligentsia), the incredible practice of demonstrating one's commitment to the revolutionary cause by showing one's willingness to cut off primordial ties became a common occurrence. Indeed, it happened so frequently that, among the intellectuals, it was not uncommon to measure redness by the degree of alienation from parents and spouses. As a result, numerous families broke up and an immeasurable amount of guilt and frustration haunted the intellectual community for years in the aftermath.

The Maoist assault on the body politic so fundamentally shook the rigid structure of state socialism that, without the resiliency of Zhou Enlai's government apparatuses, the People's Republic might have degenerated into a lawless anarchy. The delegitimation of all forms of authority in politics and culture created a power vacuum and a dangerous occasion for violence. The main force of the Cultural Revolution was directed against hierarchy. Disappointment at those who had lost their faith in socialist idealism, hatred of those who had abused their privileges, and a desire to settle old scores blinded the fanatical leaders of the Red Guards to all other issues. Mean-spiritedness and vindictiveness soon overshadowed the appearance of distributive justice in struggle sessions. Numerous forms of humiliation, discipline, corporal punishment, and torture were invented to inflict pain and suffering upon social groups labeled as "bad elements." The effect of this unprecedented tyranny upon the intellectuals of the Party, who had hailed the Anti-Rightist campaign with enthusiasm, was profound. Many of them turned away from Mao's revolutionary romanticism in disgust. Some began to question the rationality, indeed the sanity, of Mao's vision for China.

In a deeper sense, the damages inflicted upon the value system by the Maoists were the most difficult to heal. The frontal attack not only on party politics and elite culture but also on the "habits of the heart," which had been firmly rooted in the folk traditions

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

for generations, so thoroughly destroyed the social fabric that the post-Mao reconstruction began with the rudimentary education of etiquette. Even polite expressions such as "good morning," "excuse me," and "thank you" had to be reintroduced and relearned as legitimate utterances in social intercourse. The grammar of action, defined in terms of conflict, confrontation, contradiction, and contention—a reflection of Mao's insistence on the primacy of class struggle in social development—was, during the period of the Cultural Revolution, omnipresent in thought, literature, art, music, film, and drama. The effects of moral inversion on the social level were so extensive that kindness was mistaken for weakness, sympathy for sentimentalism, and civility for hypocrisy. The psychology of suspicion, linguistic violence, verbal aggressiveness, insensitivity in interpersonal communication, and an inability to be decent or polite in social relations would take years to overcome in ordinary practical living. A new intellectual vision, a new world view, indeed a new way of learning to be human is required to heal the wounds in the value system. "De-Maoification" is not only a political process but a social transformation and a cultural rejuvenation.

Mao occasionally acknowledged that he was responsible for some of these disasters, but there is no evidence that he ever regretted his obvious wrongdoings. The CCP, despite the bitter experience of each member of its top leadership, to this date, cannot bring itself to disown Mao, and the maltreated intelligentsia, almost two decades after the Cultural Revolution, is still mesmerized by Mao's charisma. Apparently, China has yet to free herself from the grips of anthropocentric scientism and mobilizational populism. Her attitude toward other Enlightenment values, notably human rights, liberty, and the dignity of the individual, and her treatment of minorities, especially the Tibetans, will give some indication of whether a new life orientation is in the offing.

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I am grateful to Arthur Kleinman and Stuart Schram of Harvard, Ying-shih Yü of Princeton, Daniel Bell of Singapore, Song Yong-bai of Seoul National University, and Viren Murthy of Honolulu who read early versions of the manuscript and of-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

fered detailed and thoughtful comments, and to Nancy Hearst and Rosanne Hall for their thorough editorial help.

ENDNOTES

[1]Stevan Harrell, "Introduction," in Jonathan N. Lipman and Stevan Harrell, eds., *Violence in China: Essays in Culture and Counterculture* (Albany, N.Y.: State of New York University Press, 1990), 1.

[2]For the sake of expediency, "Maoism," rather than the official designation, "Mao Zedong Thought" (*Mao Zedong sixiang*), will be used in this essay to refer to this ideology. The term "Maoism," specifying a coherent and independent ideology, was first used by Benjamin Schwartz in his classical study, *Chinese Communism and the Rise of Mao* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1951). I am also very much indebted to Stuart R. Schram; since his publication of *The Political Thought of Mao Tse-tung* (New York: Praeger, 1969), he has been involved in a comprehensive study of Mao Zedong Thought, enabling interested students to see its evolution in detail. It should be noted that in order to preserve the Maoist legacy, a desperate attempt has been made by the ideologists of the Chinese Communist Party to make a distinction between *Mao Zedong sixiang* (Mao Zedong Thought) and *Mao Zedong de sixiang* (Mao Zedong's thought); while the former symbolizes an official ideology that allows ideas not originated from Mao as its constitutive parts, the latter includes Mao's original ideas that must be expunged from the official party line.

[3]The figure, based on an internal CCP report of 1961, cited in Arthur and Joan Kleinman's essay in this issue, is thirty million. My figure, based on Chen Yizi's analysis, is yet to be verified. The Shanghai University journal, *Society*, in 1993 cited a figure of forty million, but that issue was immediately recalled.

[4]Perhaps the most tragic form of destruction was done by families and individuals who "voluntarily" destroyed family treasures for fear of incriminatory acts against them by ignorant Red Guards obsessed with their mission of eradicating traces of the feudal past.

[5]See David E. Apter and Tony Saich, *Revolutionary Discourse in Mao's Republic* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1994).

[6]Ross Terrill, *Mao: A Biography* (New York: Simon & Schuster, 1980), 151–52.

[7]Ibid., 165.

[8]Although no systematic studies have appeared in print on the subject, Li Tou, the literary critic, in several oral presentations, suggested that an in-depth analysis of Mao's genre and of Party culture is essential for developing a communal self-reflexivity among Chinese mainland intellectuals in exile.

[9]Terrill, *Mao: A Biography,* 152.

[10]Ibid., 159.

[11]David Apter, "Yan'an and the Narrative Reconstruction of Reality," in Tu Wei-ming, ed., *China in Transformation* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1994), 228.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[12]Ibid., 225.

[13]Ibid., 161.

[14]See Vera Schwarcz, *The Chinese Enlightenment: Intellectuals and the Legacy of the May Fourth Movement of 1919* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1986).

[15]Fred Dallmayr, "Tradition, Modernity, and Confucianism," *Human Studies,* vol. 16 (The Netherlands: Kluwer Academic Publishers, 1993), 208.

[16]It should be noted that this often-quoted statement was meant to convey the Maoist principle "that the party commands the gun and the gun shall never be allowed to command the party." See Ellis Joffe, *Party and Army: Professionalism and Political Control in the Chinese Officer Corps, 1949–1964* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1965), 57, as cited in Jonathan D. Spence, *The Search for Modern China* (New York: W. W. Norton, 1990), 563.

[17]Terrill, *Mao: A Biography,* 221.

[18]Tu Wei-ming, "Confucianism: Symbol and Substance in Recent Times," in Tu Wei-ming, *Humanity and Self-Cultivation: Essays in Confucian Thought* (Berkeley, Calif.: Berkeley Asian Humanities Press, 1979), 268–76.

[19]Perhaps the most damaging biography of Mao is the recently published *Mao Zedong Sirenyisheng Huiyilu* (Memoir of Mao Zedong's Private Physician) by Li Zhisui (Taipei: China Times Publishing Company, 1994). The Chinese version, based on *The Private Life of Chairman Mao* (New York: Random House Inc., 1994), has generated heated debates on Mao's personality in mainland China, Taiwan, Hong Kong, Singapore, and Chinese communities throughout the world. Endorsed by scholars, notably Andrew Nathan of Columbia University and Ying-shih Yü of Princeton University, as an eyewitness account of the carefully concealed aspects of Mao's ordinary daily life, Dr. Li's vivid description of Mao's idiosyncratic habits significantly challenges Mao's public image as an exemplar of a committed revolutionary devoted to a simple life. Ironically, however, recent surveys among college students in the People's Republic of China indicate that Mao's reputation as the most admired leader has not been tarnished. Furthermore, to the astonishment of liberal-minded Chinese intellectuals, the cult of Mao as a god and as a protector has been spreading in both peasant communities and urban centers. Mao's reemergence as a folk hero in newly constructed temples and as an amulet in taxis in major cities is not likely to be deterred by revelations of his shortcomings.

[20]The earliest reference is in the "Taishi" chapter of the *Book of Documents*; the statement in the "Gaoyaomo" chapter of the same book conveys a similar meaning. It has become well known because of Mencius's citation, in *Mencius,* 4B:5.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Quite simply, we are in the midst of a largely unheralded crisis in world mental health. Faced with a choice between reducing deficits and investing resources to address this mental health burden, poor and rich nations alike have opted to reduce deficits. Because many mental [and social] health problems, such as substance abuse, violence, suicide, and dementia, are encountered in low-income and high-income societies alike, solutions that work in one setting have potential applications in others. . . .There are many promising local experiments and demonstration projects. In fact, there is much that low-income countries can teach their wealthier neighbors, if only information is shared.

Robert Desjarlais, Leon Eisenberg, Byron Good, and Arthur Kleinman, eds.

From Executive Summary to *World Mental Health: Problems and Priorities in Low-Income Countries*

New York: Oxford University Press, 1995

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Anne Harrington

Unmasking Suffering's Masks: Reflections on Old and New Memories of Nazi Medicine

EVEN WITH THE PASSAGE OF A HALF CENTURY, Nazi medical science continues to exist in the consciousness of today's medical profession as the ultimate morality play of our time: a stark and terrifying moment when medicine, at its most civilized and sophisticated, allowed its skills and resources to be deflected from the goals of healing and life and invested in a perverse ideology of death and suffering. At the same time, the tendency for memory to be infused by a larger-than-life sense of horror complicates scholarly efforts to look to the history of Nazi medicine for clearer insights into the processes that create and sustain the "medicalization" of human suffering. In our nightmares and consciences, the complex truths of the past are at risk of being sorted and pressed into the simplifying imperatives of the present. The act of "looking" is partly "pre-interpreted" through a range of intense personal and collective present meanings.

This means that even as the critics and moral consciences within the medical profession tell certain stories over and over again, in order that medicine may never repeat the mistakes of the past, other stories are less well told and less well remembered because they jar in one way or another with current sensibilities or perceived truths. In this sense, we fail to use the past as a resource as fully as we could. Our memory is fractured.

This essay is offered as a defense of this assertion, and a meditation on its implications for the larger concern of this issue of

Anne Harrington is Professor of the History of Science at Harvard University.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Dædalus: human suffering as a social problem, and how scholarship may illuminate the conditions that abet and sustain it. The essay reflects a sense of fracture in its form as well as its content. Its argument is organized around three stories—true but incomplete stories—that are juxtaposed but not clearly "integrated." The first story is about "us": it reconstructs the familiar templates of today that are regularly utilized to explain Nazi biomedicine, and it suggests that those templates are intricately associated with a certain ethical vision of clinical reform in the present. The second story is about "them," about the ways in which certain Nazi physicians and scientists created their own collective representations of what was wrong with both Germany and biomedicine, and of what reform would look like. The last story is still in progress: it asks what would happen if certain "us"/"them" distinctions created by the postwar community of medical practitioners and theorists, both in Germany and the United States, were to become unstable and our enemies began to sound like "us."

STORY ONE: NAZI BIOMEDICINE AS OBJECTIVITY RUN AMOK

Since 1945, Nazism, including Nazi medicine, has been written as a catastrophic chapter in a number of larger moral stories. Some talk about scientific racism, some about the evils of eugenicist thinking; some focus on anti-Semitism, or on militarism, or on extreme nationalistic, conservative politics, or on the German scholarly community's abdication of reason and responsibility. Each story tells a certain truth, and each may cause a society to view current moral issues in a different way. Within the American medical profession today, however, one of those true but partial stories strikes a particularly resonant chord. This is the story I call "Nazi biomedicine as objectivity run amok."

The story in question has its roots in the moral atmosphere of immediate postwar Germany and the unprecedented decision by the victorious Allied powers to try certain medical doctors for war crimes at the Nuremberg trials. The first account of those trials, *das Diktat der Menschenverachtung* (*Dictatorship of Disdain for Humanity*), was published in 1947. The authors of this book were not avenging Americans or other members of the Allied judges (although the 1949 English translation of this book, *Doctors of*

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Infamy, did include additional statements by several American physicians who had been involved in the trial).[1] Instead, the authors of the book were two German physicians from the University of Heidelberg, Alexander Mitscherlich and Fred Mielke. Before the book's appearance, no one knew what kind of document they would produce; no one knew how they would interpret the responsibility of deciding what it would mean to write the history of these emerging revelations. Their reply, when it emerged, was clear and has become one of the most insistent recurring replies of our own postwar consciences: one writes the history of atrocities like the Nazi medical practices and experiments in order to *unmask,* to expose the suffering and sadism that were glossed over by pretensions of medical and scientific legitimacy and need. The voices of these first witness-bearers, Mitscherlich and Mielke, were unambiguous:

> An icy wind was sweeping over the rubble-heaps of Nuremberg when the trial began on December 9, 1946. It enveloped all of us in thick clouds of dust. The cold was oppressive—and the atmosphere too remained oppressive. Never once was suffering vouchsafed the boon of pity in that great dungeon from which the ensuing weeks brought news, bit by bit, ominously belated. Amid the growing desolation, each act of cruelty had merely served to wear away one more fragment of what had once been whole.[2]

In keeping with this simple but poignant goal of unmasking, most of *Doctors of Infamy* consists of excerpts, without commentary, from 1,471 documents received in evidence at the trial. The idea was that showing the truth, unvarnished and all the more eloquent for its stark simplicity, could help guarantee that such a situation would never happen again.

But Mitscherlich and Mielke also provided a way of conceiving what made it *possible* for Nazi medical practitioners to not see the suffering they were perpetuating. Again, many in the profession today who would act as guardians of humane values in medical practice and research have absorbed their message into their bones. These authors wrote:

> There is not much difference whether a human being is looked on as a "case," or as a number to be tattooed on the arm. These are but two aspects of the faceless approach of an age without mercy. . . .This is the alchemy of the modern age, the transmogrification of subject

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> into object, of man into thing against which the destructive urge may wreak its fury without restraint.[3]

In other words, for Mitscherlich and Mielke, the most pernicious energy driving the engine of Nazi medical science had *not* been its racism, anti-Semitism, political agendas, and so on; it had been its perverse fidelity to an obscene *objectivity* that ultimately found it possible to see all activities through the lens of expediency, scientific "interest," and efficiency. "*Objectivity*" had masked the suffering humans actually affected or destroyed by the activities in question. In this sense, *Doctors of Infamy* established a legacy in which the moral act of witness-bearing, of authentic *seeing,* became associated with an epistemological stance that denied scientific objectivity the capacity to *see* humanely. Those who would fight evil, those who would honor suffering must be prepared to rip through the pretenses of objectification in order to return subjectivity and voice to its victims.

Perhaps no one has been more explicit in affirming this dual moral-epistemological position than Benno Müller-Hill, German professor of genetics and author of *Tödliche Wissenschaft (Murderous Science).*[4] He concluded his testimony with the following words:

> I have come to the end of my account. . . .You will not hear the screams of children as the chloroform injections reached their hearts in my sentences. Nor will you hear the cries of the resisting patient: "You will rue this with your blood," as the door closed behind him. I have not spoken of those who blew up the crematorium in Auschwitz and who were executed immediately. Who hears the cries of the last of these men hanged in front of fellow prisoners: "Comrades, I am the last." Any hope there was for mankind was not to be found in German scientists but in their resisting victims. The staring eyes of the murdered rest on us. . . .[5]

How was it possible for the Nazis not to "hear the screams of children" or of their other victims? Müller-Hill's explanation returns us to the theme of our story:

> Scientists espouse objectivity and spurn value judgements. But pure objectivity leads to regarding everything as being feasible. The killing of mental patients? If it is objectively necessary on economic grounds, and if it can be objectively organized, why not? The use of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> mental patients, the Jews, and the Gypsies as experimental animals before or after their necessary deaths? If the authorities allow it, why not?. . .For these scientists, objectivity opened the door to every conceivable form of barbarism.[6]

Is it an accident that such stories get written and read with such passion in today's era of high-tech medical treatment, relentless research, and fears that the voice of patients and the ethic of personal clinical care are being lost in a system that values "cure" as a dissociated end in itself? In other words, is it possible that the story of Nazi biomedicine as "objectivity run amok" resonates so readily for critics of modern biomedicine, not only because it is true on its own terms, but because the writers involved in the present-day critique already "know," from their own experiences, how true this particular reading of the past "must" be? When Arthur Kleinman argues that biomedicine is an epistemological system fundamentally constituted "to discount the moral reality of suffering"—to reduce, dehumanize, and objectify its human subject[7]—he is not compelled to evoke the specter of the "Nazi doctors." Nevertheless, images of their bloodless, merciless instrumentalism are always available, both to him and to his readers, as the final court of appeal when arguments about the dangers of "objectification" are made.[8]

Ironically, one of the effects of raising the story about Nazi medicine to "objectivity run amok" is that those who resonate to such critiques as outlined above discover that the world is full of dangers, but that nevertheless they personally belong to the community of good people who have "seen" a potential future in a dark past, and have made a commitment to averting it. It is therefore painful but perhaps not particularly destabilizing for critics of biomedicine to remember the historical story of Nazi biomedicine as "objectivity run amok."

STORY TWO: NAZI BIOMEDICINE AS HOLISM[9]

The challenge comes when one expands one's vision of the past to discover something unexpected. It turns out that a significant number of the architects of Nazi medical ideology also believed that they were protesting the reductionistic, objectifying, calculat-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ing "gaze" of scientistic medicine; they claimed to be committed to rescuing the "whole person" for clinical care and research. Certainly, there may be a temptation to dismiss that other protest as something "inauthentic," "disingenuous," and clearly different from the impulses that drive our own concerns, but it is worth lingering a little longer over that story to see if it may carry other lessons for our own self-consciousness.

Though it is convenient to call this story of protest and reform "Nazi holism," it is important to understand that holistic thinking in German medicine did not begin with Nazism and was not inevitably compelled to become part of Nazism. We are talking about developments in German science and culture that began long before Hitler, and that then went in a range of political and intellectual directions. The first stage in making sense of Nazi "holism" is to have a sense of its position in that bigger, politically more complex picture.

The picture presents itself as a montage of images from the period around World War I, and is framed and infused with a sense of crisis—in the sciences, in medicine, and not least in society and culture. People argued over the reasons, but there was widespread agreement that part of the blame must be borne, not only by the enemy outside and the politicians within, but by the ascendancy of a mechanistic natural science, whose nihilistic message of "technique" and instrumentalism over soul and integrity had led to existential despair and a steady degradation of community life and values. Science had declared humanity's life and soul a senseless product of mechanism. Thus, people treated one another as machines. Many believed that a misguided worship of the machine and its values had been at the heart of the lost war—the first war where technology had been the deciding factor. As one commentator would later put it: "Things had come to rule over men."[10]

The thing is, a not insignificant proportion of German scientists of the time, especially in the biomedical and psychological sciences, agreed with the diagnosis. In the course of studying processes of life and mind in the laboratory and the clinic, these men had concluded that both salvation and wholeness were possible after all, and that the sources of renewed hope were to be found in a revised understanding of living nature itself. Riding out under the banner of "wholeness," these scientists argued, in varying

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ways, that a *transformed* biology and psychology, one that had learned to see phenomena less atomistically and more "holistically," less mechanistically and more "intuitively," could lead to the rediscovery of a nurturing, meaningful relationship with the natural world.[11] What science had wrought, science would heal.

In the process of overcoming the influence of the "machine" in their laboratory and clinical work, these holistic life and mind scientists also found it possible to speak to the broader question of the "machine" in society and intellectual life. From Berlin to Prague, Vienna to Zurich, holistic life and mind scientists mingled their voices with those of cultural critics, crisis mongers, and would-be reformers. Those other voices, from outside the sciences, also typically used images of the "machine" and "wholeness" in order to articulate what they believed had gone wrong in politics, the community, and individual existence—and to identify roads to renewal.[12] In contrast to the explicit emphasis of the scientists, the "machine" in these other arguments rarely referred directly to a particular model of life and mind. Nor was it a clear pointer to any particular product of applied knowledge and engineering: railroads, factories, telegraphs, etc. The image of the "machine" functioned, rather, as a general, full-armed gesture to the entire problematic world of scientific instrumentalism, modernism, and industrialization. "Wholeness" in these larger arguments was an equally full-armed, pastoral alternative to the "machine"—not so much a rejection of the modern world in toto as a vision that demanded that science and modern concepts of progress not be allowed to undermine the centrality of spiritual, moral, and aesthetic values for both the individual and the community.[13]

What happened when science began to mix the language of its own critique of the "machine" with that of these other, full-time cultural critics—many of them known for their distinctly "anti-scientific" biases? (The radical "life philosopher" Theodor Lessing called modern man "a species of robber-apes which has been infected with megalomania by science."[14]) Significantly, the result was less an open struggle over values and control, and more a subtle shift in the cultural logic that ruled the larger critique as a whole. Even though science (the "old" science) had been the enemy, nevertheless it had always been a *powerful* enemy, with an authority that would be useful to have on one's own side. Now

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that it was in the process of remaking itself (the "new science"),[15] now that its truths were in the service of "wholeness" rather than the "machine," few objected to letting it continue to claim a unique social and epistemological authority in the larger debate. Draping its findings in images that resonated of the same spiritual and cultural traditions defended by these other critics, holistic science blurred distinctions between perceived problems and perceived solutions, all the while carrying its unique epistemological authority through one level of debate to the next. For those with the culturally and politically sensitized ears to hear the messages, the new arguments in biology and psychology for "wholeness" and against the "machine" would gradually come to persuade simultaneously as natural truth, salvation mythology, and psychobiological guide to cultural and political survival.

For a while, the scientific perspectives of holism seemed capable of being reconciled with a range of political positions: from socialism and democratic republicanism on one side to monarchism and fascism on the other. Jewish scientists like the neurologist Kurt Goldstein and the psychologist Max Wertheimer for a while represented compelling and persuasive voices for wholeness. However, as the 1920s descended into greater depths of discontent, aspects of the "wholeness"/"mechanism" battle imagery began to go more consistently in directions that both Germany and the rest of the world would learn to regret; they would begin to fold into the goals and politics of National Socialism. At this point, one begins to find oneself confronted with an apparent paradox. One finds that the holistic rhetoric of rebellion and reform in German biomedicine is functioning as a means of legitimating an oppressive social order rather than serving as a challenge to that order. Under National Socialism, the rebellious and quasi-militaristic dimension of German holism's self-image would intensify in directions that more or less explicitly equated the holistic fight to reform science with the Nazi fight against everything racially foreign. In 1935, the Munich mathematician M. Casper spoke of science's history as a Manichaean conflict between men who sought to conceive "the world as a whole" and men who tried to reduce that wholeness to mechanistic first principles. "Is it coincidence," he asked disingenuously, "that within the first rank only German names appear?"[16] Gestalt psychologist Wolfgang Metzger (who

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

stayed on in Germany after his Jewish colleagues fled or emigrated) spoke of holistic science as locked in a battle against the "chaotic," "mechanistic" spirit of the West. The violence of the present war, he declared in 1942, was a "visible and tangible sign" of this "spiritual struggle" that would in the end lead to the rise of a "new world age."[17]

This intensification of militaristic language in the literature was accompanied by an increasing explicit tendency to superimpose the terms of the holistic struggle against mechanism onto the idea of a racial struggle between Germans and Jews, popularized by people like Chamberlain, Rosenberg, and Hitler. Jews now began to appear in the discussions as flesh-and-blood metaphors of the "cold" epistemology of the "machine." This is something different from the well-known tendency in Nazi Germany to denounce this or that example of "Jewish science" (psychoanalysis, Einsteinian relativity, etc.). Here, rather, Jewishness as a *racial condition*—the Jewish way of thinking and being—was perceived as a disorganizing and sterilizing force to be contained and conquered by the answering racial power of German-Aryan "wholeness."

That metaphorical transformation had a number of consequences. It was increasingly said, or implied, that the very capacity to see nature as a "whole" (the art of *Ganzheitsbetrachtung*) was a trait peculiar to the "Indo-Germanic" mind, while the Jewish mind was fundamentally analytic, dissolutive, and materialistic. One study, for example, claimed to have discovered evidence of inferior spatial and compositional ("holistic-perceptual") skills in the drawings of Jewish schoolchildren as compared to their Aryan peers.[18] Another study analyzed the evidence that Jewish scientists suffer from a lack of spatial perceptual capacity, as evidenced by their failure to develop roentgen stereoscopy.[19] The "psychological anthropologist" Erich Jaensch—whose influence in German psychology may have been unparalleled before his death in 1939[20]—developed a biopsychological typology that opposed a superior "Northern integration type" (the "J" type) to an inferior "Jewish-liberal dissolution type" (the "S" type).[21] The "S" type, which after 1933 he also called the *Gegentyp* (anti-type), was described as intellectually rigid and abstract, with a tendency to become easily fragmented. In addition, it was described as artificial, un-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

trustworthy, and biologically soft (with a tendency towards tuberculosis and schizophrenia).[22]

If it was the case that the German and the Jewish races had radically different ways of experiencing and interacting with the natural world—apparently rooted in their different biologies—then one possible conclusion for Nazi holists was that no objective standard of truth could exist to which all peoples must submit. Truth, by definition, always carried the stamp of a particular culture and biology—a particular *Volk* and *Blut*—and served that *Volk*'s "political reality" and "fateful struggle."[23] Indeed, as Heinz Wolff, a Nazi student leader, put it, the very notion that there could exist an "objectivity" transcending national and racial needs was a self-serving ideology, rooted in a (Jewish) scientific liberalism, whose devious aim was to encourage people to forget that science was actually made by "living men," by "men of flesh and blood." Writing in 1935, the prominent Nazi holistic physician Karl Kötschau agreed:

> The freedom of science cannot exist in the right to concern one's self with things that are fully alien to the thinking of one's own *Volk*, and that possibly even serve the interests of another *Volk*. To be dependent on an international *Weltanschauung* alien to one's own *Volk* is intellectual slavery, not freedom.[24]

But the "racializing" of holism's struggle against mechanism did not stop with such "biologies of knowledge" as these. Nazis like Alfred Rosenberg had long advocated the idea that the struggle between Teuton and Jew corresponded in some ill-defined way to a struggle between the principles of life and death.[25] However, it took a 1935 article by the physician Alfred Böttcher to make the further connections and claim that actually the holistic struggle to overcome mechanism in *science* could be understood as a struggle between an Aryan life principle and a Jewish death principle; between Nature and something unnatural whose "blood came out of Chaos":

> The Jewish way of thinking carries, like his blood that came out of Chaos, a dissolutive character. For this reason, the Jew is always attempting to split all things, to break them down to their atoms and in this way to make them complicated and so incomprehensible that a healthy person can no longer find his way in the jumble of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> contradictory theories. Thus does the Jew dissolve the miracle of creation, leaving behind him a pile of rubble, a "chaos" everywhere he penetrates with his corrosive mind.
>
> The healthy non-Jew, in contrast, born out of creation, thinks simply, organically, creatively. He unifies, builds up—he thinks in terms of wholes. Briefly summarized, the blood law of the Jew advances: chaos, world revolution, death! And the blood law of the creative-heroic man advances: the organic worldview, world pacification, life![26]

From rhetoric like this, it seems only a short step to the pronouncement of the holistic psychologist Friedrich Sander that all races that are inherently alienated from the German values of wholeness and gestalt (the *Gestaltfremde)* must be "eliminated." The German word he used was "*ausschalten*," the same euphemism later used to refer to the genocide of the Jews under the terms of the "Final Solution."[27]

This story is highly ironic, since actually, until 1933, some of the most important and influential German holistic critics of biomedicine were both Jewish in their ethnic origins and liberal in their politics. In the atmosphere of relative tolerance that prevailed during the Weimar years, "liberal," "Jewish" holism managed to share some common cultural goals with "conservative" and, in some cases, "anti-Semitic" holism. By the late 1920s, however, influential Jewish holistic scientists like Max Wertheimer, founder of Gestalt psychology, and Kurt Goldstein, founder of a psychosomatic, existentially-oriented neurology, were increasingly vilified as problems posing as solutions, as pathogens pretending to offer healing solutions to Germany's woes. Their visions of wholeness were false because the Jewish mind was incapable of grasping what a true holistic science would look like. As one tracks the varied arguments across the decade, one can see how, gradually, different defenders of "wholeness" were coming to be as much in a state of tension with one another as they were with their mechanistic rivals, each developing arguments designed to undermine or neutralize those pushed by the other.

Of course, the Jews were not the only perceived blot on the *Volksganze* (folk community or "whole") under Nazism: the congenitally weak, sick, and mentally disabled were also singled out as "ballast," "parasites," and diseases within the organismic body

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

to be systematically eradicated through mass sterilization and, in later years, through "euthanasia" or enforced "mercy" killings. Holistic rhetoric used the trope of the supremacy of the whole over its parts to counter anti-eugenicist arguments that relied on the putative rights of individuals to reproduce or live their lives as they saw fit. Thus, holistic psychologist Felix Krueger declared sternly in 1935:

> It is given to people that they may recognize that which is *un-whole* in their being, that is to say, opposed to life and hostile to formation. They must make a sacrifice of their imperfection, by obeying their state and freely recognizing the ordered power above them.[28]

Holistic rhetoric found common cause with eugenicist thinking by further suggesting that the "un-whole"—the infirm, disabled, and genetically inferior—represented in their own way no less an offense to the values of "wholeness" than did the Jews. In this rhetoric, the infirm and disabled—somewhat like the Jews—were *themselves* transformed into metaphors of mechanism. "Machine-people" was the disdainful term used by Nazi physician Karl Kötschau—a reference to the fact that such individuals owed their survival to medical technology, and were incapable of surviving outside the shelter of an artificial environment. Kötschau was the director of a government-sponsored movement in the 1930s—about which little was known in the scholarship about Nazi medicine until quite recently—to establish a holistic and synthetic "new German therapy" that would integrate "alternative" and mainstream medicine under an anti-Cartesian, anti-reductionistic "biological" metaphysics.[29]

What should medicine be all about, once it had moved away from machines and focused on life in its wholeness? These are Kötschau's words:

> Biological medicine does not cast the person out of Nature, does not dissect and atomize him, but rather always examines the person in his holistic functioning and reacting. . . .Biological research methods impart understanding and application possibilities from old medicine and folk medicine. . . .It is a contribution of the National Socialist revolution to have freed the doctor from. . .[his former] mechanistic-materialistic imprisonment. The medical profession accordingly moves more and more away from the former overly fastidious

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> and one-sided mechanistic thinking that. . .must have devastating consequences for the health of the *Volk*.[30]

What happened then to medical practice when Nazi medicine was freed from its "one-sided mechanistic thinking" and began to consider ". . .health and disease in the context of the Nature-whole"? It discovered that its primary concern should *not* be those who were already sickly and useless, but rather the healthy who had the most to contribute to the *Volk*.[31] And it realized that prevention and education rather than care must dominate its policies. In keeping with this insight, Kötschau's "New German Therapy" was vigorous in the 1930s in its efforts to discourage the use of "genetic poisons" such as alcohol and tobacco, to fight environmental toxins in the workplace, and even to encourage bakeries to produce more whole-grain bread rather than less nourishing white varieties.[32]

In addition, when some form of intervention proved unavoidable, New German Therapy encouraged physicians to consider the use of such "natural," "folk" therapeutic approaches as herbal remedies, massage, fasting, and special diets of raw vegetables and fruits. The medieval mystic German physician Paracelsus was evoked as the guardian angel of this endeavor. As historian Robert Proctor has put it: "Paracelsean medicine was said to embody the natural, earthbound, experimental nature of German medicine—medicine that was 'close to the people' and not based on 'a lot of complicated theories.' It embraced 'the whole man,' not just particular organs or ailments."[33]

Ultimately, the attempt to systematically reorient Nazi medicine in holistic directions would flounder under opposition from other medical leaders within the Party, and especially the SS.[34] In the end, particularly as the war made holism less practical and efficient, a more systematic kind of mechanism did prevail in policy, and in the camps, out of which emerged the images that came to haunt the present age. Holism "lost" the struggle to speak for Nazi medicine and biology, but not for lack of trying. Although both "holists" and "mechanists" were, in their different ways, equally dedicated to the goals of racial "cleansing" and strengthening the "Master Race," in the end "organicism" and calls for a return to *Volk* (community) were no match for the militaristic Darwinian

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ethic and the practical technologies of racial management that the mechanists could offer (racial screening, sterilization, castration, and ultimately methods of mass "euthanasia"). Nevertheless, certain manifestations of the original Nazi holistic vision would persist to the end. For example, the 1940s saw the founding of a huge plantation for the growing and experimental testing of herbal remedies at the Dachau concentration camp. Here, some eight hundred to twelve hundred prisoners (many of them pastors, after the Jews were selected out for extermination in 1941) labored and died under the supervision of brutal SS followers of Paracelsus and other healers. This project may in the end stand as one of the most perverse symbols of the Nazi medical dedication to "wholeness."[35]

Even where technocratic pragmatism overtly prevailed in the concentration camps, we know little about the ways in which a nostalgic sugarcoating of the rhetoric of "wholeness" and "organicism" may have continued to help make it more palatable for some of its perpetrators. The career of SS-Colonel Joachim Mrugowsky, chief of the Institute of Hygiene in the *Waffen-SS*, is a case in point. The Institute of Hygiene was, among other things, responsible for maintaining and distributing the Zyklon-B gas used at Auschwitz.[36] At Auschwitz and Sachsenhausen, Mrugowsky sent countless prisoners to their deaths, conducted "research" that involved injecting healthy people with lethal tubercular cultures, and executed Russian prisoners using poisoned bullets.[37] At Nuremberg in 1946, he was found guilty of war crimes and condemned to death. Yet, it is very likely that this same physician would have vigorously protested against the idea that his work at Auschwitz represented the "machine" face of medicine at its most perverse. In his own mind, such a characterization would have seemed absurd, because he saw *himself* as someone vigorously opposed to the mechanizing tendencies of modern medicine and deeply committed to a holistic biomedical perspective. After hours in Auschwitz, he often retired to his extensive private library, filled with books revering the age of Goethe and Alexander von Humboldt.[38] Did the two sides of this man simply coexist in separate, more or less dissociated spheres, an example of what Robert Jay Lifton has called psychological "doubling"?[39] Or did men like Mrugowsky find it possible actively to visualize a way in which lethal injections and Goethean holistic ideals could be rec-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

onciled in some higher salvationist story? Either way, "objectification" does not seem an adequate term to capture the full complexity of social and psychological processes that permitted Goethe and gas chambers to coexist in Auschwitz and in this man's mind.

STORY THREE: "WHAT DOES THIS HAVE TO DO WITH MY FATHER'S WORK?"

If one agrees that Nazi biomedicine was more than "objectification," nevertheless its own rhetoric that declared it to be in fact a thing *opposed* to objectification may still leave us unmoved in our own moral certainties. In particular, a case like that of Mrugowsky may appear to be so monstrous that one readily brushes the rhetoric aside, focuses on the crimes behind it, and is tempted to leave it at that. But is it possible that the story of Nazi holism—Nazism that believed it was working to overcome "objectivity run amok"—is more unsettling than it may seem? Are there any lessons here for our own attempts to recognize what promotes good and what must be fought as evil? This essay seeks an answer to that question by means of a final story about a man who came, for many in postwar Germany, to represent the antithesis of the objectifying, "technocratic" gaze that the medical profession believed to have been typical of Nazi medicine in the death camps. The man is the German psychosomaticist Viktor von Weizsäcker (1886–1957). One of his students and colleagues at the University of Heidelberg was Alexander Mitscherlich, first author of *Doctors of Infamy*. It is no accident, but perhaps somewhat troubling in light of the story that follows, that a disciple of Weizsäcker should turn out to have been the man who helped set the post-World War II focus on "objectification" as the murderous "essence" of Nazi medicine. In postwar Germany, Weizsäcker, even more than Mitscherlich, would be a powerful voice protesting objectification in medicine, and visualizing more humane alternatives to it.

The core idea of Weizsäcker's alternative system of medicine was his concept of the "Gestalt circle." He envisioned disease and physiological malfunctioning as encompassing not only inputs and outputs—perceptions and reactions—but also a "third variable": the subject and his or her direct experience of illness. As Weizsäcker conceived things, a patient's understanding of the symbolic or

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

practical *meaning* of a disease—what medical anthropologists today call the "illness narrative"—shaped its actual reality and course in a circular dialectic that brought biology and biography together into an indivisible, interactive unity.[40]

For Weizsäcker this meant that medicine ultimately had to become more than a natural science: it had to embrace also what Weizsäcker himself called an "anthropological" perspective that perceived disease as having not just a physiological significance but also a biographical significance, the final nature of which could only be elucidated through empathic dialogue with the patient. From the beginning, psychoanalytic concepts like "unconscious," "repressed," and "defensive" would become central tools for illuminating the dynamics of disease thus understood—even as Weizsäcker went further with these concepts than Freud himself was prepared to go.

In a 1927 essay, Weizsäcker told the famous story of how the French neurologist Jean-Martin Charcot had privately admitted to a young Freud that, in cases of hysteria, there was "always" a sexual issue at stake. In his autobiographical account, Freud recalled how he had said to himself: "If he knows that, why doesn't he say so?" Weizsäcker then described an encounter he had himself had with an aging Freud, many years later, in which the great man had admitted that the sudden intrusion of an accident or organic disease in the life of a patient can cure that patient of his or her neurosis. Weizsäcker had then said to *himself*: "If he knows that, why doesn't he say so?" Obviously, it was up to Weizsäcker to "say so," and to develop the full clinical implications of the insight that (as he would later put it) "nothing organic is without meaning." In his 1927 essay, he concluded: "It seems as if, in science, there is almost a law whereby one epoch only says the one thing, while remaining silent about the other thing, that it also knows."[41] There is a deep, unintended irony in Weizsäcker's comment here that ultimately, as one probes his story, begins to resonate on more than one level.

Because here was holism that the German postwar medical community had embraced as incorruptible, had hailed as an antidote to the calculating, impersonal attitude of medical expediency that had allowed Nazi medicine to support—as Kleinman puts it—a "routinization of evil."[42] Yet, there may be something incom-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

plete still about our understanding of its potentialities. At a historic public forum on "Medicine and National Socialism" held in Berlin in 1980—the first of its kind in Germany—Tübingen sociologist Walter Wuttke-Groneberg took on Weizsäcker's past in a hard-hitting paper entitled "From Heidelberg to Dachau." The paper asserted that Weizsäcker had differentiated himself from the SS-physicians of the concentration camps, "not in his aim, but [only] in his method."[43]

Wuttke-Groneberg found cause for these shocking claims in two professional occasions in Weizsäcker's life: a lecture series on "medical professional questions" that the psychosomaticist had offered at Heidelberg in 1933,[44] just after Hitler's seizure of power, and a 1947 essay entitled "Euthanasia and Human Experimentation" that was written in reaction to the Nuremberg trials.[45] Wuttke-Groneberg pointed out that Weizsäcker, though he certainly did not try to absolve the convicted physicians of responsibility for their crimes, nevertheless failed to condemn outright the concept of "physician as exterminator." Instead, he went out of his way to defend both euthanasia and human experimentation as necessary parts of medicine, and to paint a picture of violence and human sacrifice as a necessary part of the tragedy of human history. The atrocities of Auschwitz and Dachau were caused, he said, *not* by the idea that physicians may rightly destroy the lives of their patients, but by an indiscriminate technocratism that had led physicians to exercise their power in the absence of any rational *ethic* that could have guided decisions about appropriate extermination.

What would such an ethics of extermination have represented for Weizsäcker? Wuttke-Groneberg pointed to the above-mentioned 1933 lecture series in which Weizsäcker had for the first time defended the medical appropriateness of extermination in cases of lives judged "not worth living." At that time, Weizsäcker seemed to suggest that physicians making such judgments may want to consider whether the lives in question were capable of productive work. At any rate, the physician's aim, Weizsäcker argued in 1933, should not and could not be life "at any price." Instead, the medical profession, working in cooperation with the state, must develop a rational "policy of extermination" to guide its practices.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

At the Berlin conference, Wuttke-Groneberg's presentation provoked considerable heated discussion and protest, with no consensus or clarity. He was accused of having deliberately conflated Weizsäcker's intellectually sophisticated and humane attempt to reintroduce the "subject" into medicine with the vulgar, subjectivist "New German Therapy" of the Nazis; of citing Weizsäcker's discussions on death and euthanasia selectively and in a manipulative manner; and of glossing over the significance of central Weizsäcker concepts like "mutuality" and "solidarity" that dictated that the extermination of any subject in a clinical situation that was anything other than a therapeutic release would leave deadly traces on the other party.[46] These counterarguments were not fully successful in dispelling a general sense of unease in the audience, but they were sufficient to usher in a fragile truce on the question of Weizsäcker's "brown past" that would hold for several years.

Then the plot thickened. Six years later, at a symposium in Heidelberg in 1986 celebrating Weizsäcker's one hundredth birthday, Mechthilde Kütemeyer—a clinician at Cologne who had helped edit Weizsäcker's collected writings—declared that evidence recently unearthed in the military archives of Poland raised troubling new questions about Weizsäcker's brief career as Director of the Neurological Clinic and Research Institute at the University of Breslau from 1941 to 1945:

> In the military archive of Katowitz, Poland, over 200 patient files stemming from the years 1942 and 1943 were found, along with an explicit accompanying note containing the following content: "Neurological Research Institute, Prof. von Weizsäcker, Breslau, Neudorfer Street 118–120. Please find enclosed the fixed brain and spinal cord of child. . .(name and birthdate) that I am sending you in accordance with your letter from 25.3.1942, requesting an opportunity to investigate it neuropathologically. An excerpt from the case history is included. The supervising physician (Hecker), Province Medical Chief, Privy Councillor." We are dealing here with antisocial and handicapped children and youths from the Children's Division of the Loben Psychiatric Clinic for Youth (Lubliniec). The patient files make unmistakably clear that the brains in question were products of child euthanasia.[47]

The silence and foot shuffling after these remarks was palpable. People tried purposefully to deflect the conversation in other direc-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tions. Then, Frau Penselin, Weizsäcker's daughter, gained the floor and demanded to know more about the documents discussed by Kütemeyer, with which she said she was unfamiliar. Most of all, she demanded to know how she was supposed to understand the significance of these documents, what role her father had played in all this, and—above all—*what it all had to do with his work.* Before Kütemeyer could open her mouth, the moderator, Peter Hahn, moved in, "Unfortunately, I must now at this point interrupt. I think these questions are so important that they must be further discussed and clarified elsewhere." When a member of the audience shouted "let the questions be answered!" Hahn chose to deal with the interruption as a disciplinary issue, and the unruly outsider eventually quieted down.[48]

But the questions remain, particularly in the pained words of Weizsäcker's daughter, "*what does all this have to do with my father's work?*" What we are dealing with here is a question that is not only about the "objective" historical record. It is also a question about how collective memories of a traumatic past function in shaping present identities, how certain historical revelations are seen to have relevance for our *own* intellectual attractions and moral commitments.

The historian Christian Meier, writing about Auschwitz, declared that, "for a nation to appropriate its history," it must "look at it through the eyes of identity."[49] His concern, of course, was with the need of the German people to appropriate their own history. However, in light of the fact that Auschwitz haunts not just Germans but the "rest of us" as well, is there a moral responsibility to consider what it would mean—also for "us"—to look at Auschwitz, not from the perspective of an outsider's moral outrage, but through the "eyes of identity"?

The challenge of looking back at the Nazi past with the "eyes of identity" is the challenge of discovering that past images and phantasms of goodness *could* have seduced us too—not in the name of brutality and evil, but in the name of some vision of salvation and reform. In hindsight, we may be able to see, with chilling clarity, how a past vision became an illuminated end in itself, divorced from the concrete circumstances of its actualization, but are we certain that we would have "seen" so clearly then? And if not, how can we be so certain that our current

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

commitments to the good causes and ideals around which we have built our professional lives are allowing us to see as clearly as we should?

The struggle to write new and less comfortable stories about the Nazi past, including stories told through the "eyes of identity" may be important for another reason. Recently, several historians have called attention to the ways in which the agendas of ecologically-oriented leftist groups like the Green Party have absorbed in refashioned form some of the ideals and ideologies of the same holistic and vitalistic biologies that at one time struck an alliance with the Third Reich.[50] Critics like Jean-Pierre Faye have also called attention to ways in which key pieces of the vocabulary of postmodernism ("deconstruction," "logocentrism") actually had their origins in protests against "objectification" written by Nazi and proto-fascist writers like Ernst Krieck and Lugwig Klages.[51] In other words, the part of Nazism that was not—in its own eyes—about "objectification" but rather saw itself as a protest *against* it, shows signs of being an early chapter in a story we are still in the process of writing today. The fact that it is a story that involves many today who actively abhor the agendas of Nazism is only surprising because our working memories of Nazism have left too many of us still vulnerable to surprises of this sort. To have a clearer understanding of the ways in which "their" stories may resonate with "our" own is almost certainly going to be uncomfortable. It would seem, however, to be a necessary expansion of consciousness if we accept that part of the task of confronting human suffering is to recognize that products of our own moral imagination—especially those that shine for us the most brightly—can, if we let them, become seductions, myths of goodness that we can be tempted to serve, even at the expense of the human beings in whose name they were allegedly first constructed.

ENDNOTES

[1]Alexander Mitscherlich and Fred Mielke, *Doctors of Infamy: The Story of the Nazi Medical Crimes (Diktat der Menschenverachtung)*, trans. Heinz Norden (New York: H. Schuman, 1949).

[2]Ibid., 151.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[3]Ibid., 152.

[4]Benno Müller-Hill, *Murderous Science: Elimination by Scientific Selection of Jews, Gypsies, and Others, Germany 1933–1945*, trans. George Fraser (Oxford and New York: Oxford University Press, 1988).

[5]Ibid., 104.

[6]Ibid., 89.

[7]See Arthur Kleinman, "A Critique of Objectivity in International Health," in *Writing at the Margin: Discourse Between Anthropology and Medicine* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1995).

[8]Cf. also Kleinman's discussion of the "medicalization" of terror, torture, and mass homicide in the Nazi death camps in *Rethinking Psychiatry: From Cultural Category to Personal Experience* (New York: The Free Press, 1988).

[9]Much of the material for this "story" and the next is taken from my forthcoming book, *Reenchanted Science: Holism in German Culture from Wilhelm II to Hitler* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1996).

[10]The above quotation is by German socialist analyst Erich Wittenberg, writing in 1938 from abroad. Wittenberg went on to identify the drama of the Great War as a "high-point" of rationalistic, technological thinking, and the defeat of Germany as "the hour of reversal": "They found themselves at the end of the world war at the graveyard of their hopes. . . .Never before had a youth experienced such a total destruction of all values, sciences and arts; never before was the distance between the naive hope with which the youth were pulled into the field and the hard and cold reality so great and so unbridgeable." Erich Wittenberg, "Die wissenschaftskrisis in Deutschland im Jahre 1919: Ein Beitrag zur Wissenschaftsgeschichte," *Theoria: A Swedish Journal of Philosophy and Psychology* 4 (1938): 235–36.

[11]Examples include Hans Driesch, who resurrected teleological, vitalistic thinking in biology with his nonmaterial concept of the *entelechy* (guiding the embryo through its developments); Jakob von Uexküll, who called attention to the irreducible unity of an organism within an environment it had itself "created" from sense experience, and whose experienced features were meaningfully related to the organism's own existence (an orientation that would influence both ethology and psychosomatic medicine in Germany); the holistic (*Ganzheit)* school of biopsychology under Felix Krueger that emphasized the primacy of affect and irrationality in the unfolding of perception and cognition; the school of Gestalt psychology in Berlin under Wertheimer, Köhler, and Koffka that stressed the way in which perceived reality was ordered by active contributions of the perceiving mind/brain; the dynamic, teleological neurology of Constantin von Monakow that emphasized the regenerative capacities of the brain and its innate spiritual impulses; the psychosomatic "organismic" neuropsychiatry of Kurt Goldstein that celebrated health as biological "value" and stressed how life strived always for personal meaning; the "person"-oriented biologist and medicine of the internist Theodor Brugsch, and the "medical anthropology" of Viktor von Weizsäcker, discussed later in this essay.

[12]Fritz Ringer, *The Decline of the German Mandarins: The German Academic Community, 1890–1933* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1969),

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

is still probably the best source for getting a sense of these broader debates as they developed in the universities, even though Ringer did not include the natural sciences in his study.

[13]Leo Marx who, speaking of the "fatalistic view of technology" in American literary culture, stresses that the world view of "pastoralism. . .should not be thought of as the logical antithesis of the modern belief in progress. That hypothetical role belongs to primitivism, the doctrine which holds that the environment most conducive to human well-being is the purest, least developed state of nature. The ideal situation that a true primitivist may be supposed to cherish is located as far away as possible, in space or time or both, from the urban centers of advanced civilization. The pastoral world-view, on the other hand. . .entails neither an uncritical embrace of material progress nor its total repudiation. What matters most in the pastoral dispensation is the proper subordination of all material concerns to the satisfactions of the inner life. . . ." Leo Marx, "Literary Culture and the Fatalistic View of Technology," *The Pilot and the Passenger: Essays on Literature, Technology, and Culture in the United States* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1988), 187.

[14]In Theodor Lessing's classic *Decline of the Earth under Mind (Untergang der Erde am Geist)*, cited in Herbert Schnädelbach, *Philosophy in Germany, 1831–1933* (Cambridge and New York: Cambridge University Press, 1984), 145.

[15]Erich von Kahler's *Der Beruf der Wissenschaft* (Berlin: Bondi, 1920) was an important monograph of the time that made a great deal of this presumed distinction between "old" and "new" science. Portions of this book were translated and reproduced in the volume edited by Peter Lassman and Irving Velody, *Max Weber's "Science as a Vocation"* (London: Unwin Hyman, 1989).

[16]Cited in Karl Lothar Wolf and Wilhelm Troll, *Goethes Morphologischer Auftrag* (Saale: Max Niemeyer, 1942), 60.

[17]Wolfgang Metzger, "Der Auftrag der Psychologie in der Auseinandersetzung mit dem Geist des Westens," *Volk im Werden—Zeitschrift für Erneuerung der Wissenschaften* 10 (1942): 143.

[18]Alexander von Senger, "Ergänzungen zu meiner Arbeit 'Rasse und Baukunft,'" *Ziel und Weg: Zeitschrift des Nationalsozialistischen Deutschen Ärzte-Bundes* 5 (1935): 564–69.

[19]Heinrich Chantraine, "Naturwissenschaft und Raumsichtigkeit," *Ziel und Weg* 6 (1) (1936): 7–16.

[20]Frederick Wyatt and Hans-Lukas Teuber, "German Psychology under the Nazi System—1933–1940," *Psychological Review* 51 (1944): 233.

[21]Ulfried Geuter, *The Professionalization of Psychology in Nazi Germany* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1992), 169; See also E. R. Jaensch, *Der Gegentypus: Psychologisch-anthropologische Grundlagen deutscher Kulturphilosophie, ausgehend von dem was wir überwinden wollen* (*Rassenkunde u. Psychologische Anthropologie* Nr. 2; *Beihefte 75 zur Zietschrift für angewandte Psychologie und Charakterkunde*) (Leipzig: Johann Ambrosius Barth, 1938).

[22]Jaensch, *Der Gegentypus.*

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[23]Robert A. Pois, *National Socialism and the Religion of Nature* (New York: St. Martin's Press, 1986), 72.

[24]Karl Kötschau, "Die nationalsozialistische Revolution in der Medizin," *Ziel und Weg 5* (1935): 135.

[25]Cf. Gyorgy Lukács, (1955) *Die Zerstorung der Vernunft: d. Weg d. Irrationalismus von Schelling zu Hitler* (Berlin: Aufbau-Verlag, 1984), 430.

[26]Alfred Böttcher, "Die Lösung der Judenfrage," *Ziel und Weg 5* (1935): 226.

[27]Friedrich Sander, "Deutsche Psychologie und nationalsozialistische Weltanschauung," *Nationalsozialistisches Bildungswesen* 2 (1937): 642.

[28]Cited in Ulfried Geuter, "Das Ganze und die Gemeinschaft—Wissenschaftliches und politisches Denken in der Ganzheitspsychologie Felix Kruegers," in Carl Graumann, ed., *Psychologie im Nationalsozialismus* (New York/Berlin/Heidelberg/Tokyo: Springer Verlag, 1985), 72.

[29]Currently, the most comprehensive discussion of this movement exists in a medical history dissertation by Detlef Bothe, *Neue Deutsche Heilkunde, 1933–1945 (Abhandlungen zur Geschichte der Medizin und der Naturwissenschaften,* vol. 62, eds. Rold Winau and H. Müller-Ditez) (Husum: Matthiesen Verlag, 1991).

[30]Kötschau, excerpt from *Zum nationalsozialistischen Umbruch in der Medizin* (1936), Doc. 83, 1–2, in Walter Wuttke-Groneberg, ed., *Medizin im Nationalsozialismus: Ein Arbeitsbuch* (Tübingen: Schwäbische Verlagsgesellschaft, 1980), 152.

[31]Ibid., 154–55.

[32]For some discussion, see Robert Proctor, *Racial Hygiene: Medicine under the Nazis* (Cambridge, Mass.: Harvard University Press, 1988), 235–38.

[33]Ibid., 233–34.

[34]The background to these developments lies in inherent methodological divisions in biology and medicine in Germany that went back many years, and had early led to the rise of two mutually antagonistic biomedical factions within the Nazi movement. The first of these, more Party dominated, was an ideologically-driven right-wing group that was sympathetic to holistic thinking and largely motivated by *völkisch* anti-Semitism and Aryan racial ideals. This group included people like ideologue Alfred Rosenberg, Gerhard Wagner, head of the Nazi Doctors' League, Julius Streicher, editor of the virulently anti-Semitic *Der Stürmer*, and holistic biologist Ernst Lehmann, editor of *Der Biologe*. The second faction was made up of pragmatic medical technocrats who wanted to use a hard-nosed form of Mendelian genetics, Darwinism, and racial biology as the basis for Nazi social policy and military strategy. This group had found a home for itself under the jurisdiction of Himmler's SS and its daughter racial organizations, the *Lebensborn* and *Ahnenerbe.* It included men like human geneticist Karl Astel and his assistant Lothar Stengel von Rutkowski at Jena, the botanist Heinz Brücher, and professor for law and race Falk Ruttke, who later took over SS training on race in occupied Poland. When Karl Kötschau was appointed to a chair in "nature therapy" at Jena in 1934, a plot was hatched to topple Kötschau, his allies, and ultimately the entire effort to make "holism" the framing metaphysical ideology of Nazi medical science and practice. Basically, the idea of the Astel group was to "expose" holism as a form of cleverly disguised

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Roman Catholic dogmatism, the goal of which was to subvert the "empirical, factual" approach to nature that was now declared by this group to be central to the ethos of National Socialism.

[35]For details of the Dachau concentration camp herbal project, see documents 110, 1–6 in *Medizin im Nationalsozialismus: Ein Arbeitsbuch*, 199–202; and *Volk und Gesundheit: Heilen und Vernichten im Nationalsozialismus*, ed. Projektgruppe "Volk und Gesundheit," mit Beiträge von Martin Beutelspacher (Tübingen: Tübinger Vereinigung für Volkskunde, 1982), 52–54.

[36]Robert Jay Lifton, *The Nazi Doctors: Medical Killing and the Psychology of Genocide* (New York: Basic Books, 1986), 31–32.

[37]*Volk und Gesundheit: Heilen und Vernichten im Nationalsozialismus*, 39.

[38]See Walter Wuttke-Groneberg in *Medizin im Nationalsozialismus: Ein Arbeitsbuch*, 38.

[39]Lifton, *The Nazi Doctors*, 418–29.

[40]For a sense of the breadth, see Weizsäcker's collected works in ten volumes, *Gesammelte Schriften in 10 Bänden,* ed. Peter Achilles, Dieter Janz, Martin Schrenk, and Carl Friedrich von Weizsäcker (Frankfurt: Suhrkamp Verlag, 1986).

[41]Viktor von Weizsäcker, "Der Arzt und der Kranke: Stücke einer medizinischen Anthropologie," in Ibid., vol. 5, 177.

[42]Kleinman, *Rethinking Psychiatry*, 105.

[43]Wuttke-Groneberg, "Von Heidelberg nach Dachau," in G. Baader and U. Schultz, eds., *Medizin in Nationalsozialismus* (Berlin: Verlagsgesellschaft Gesundheit GmbH, 1980), 120.

[44]Viktor von Weizsäcker, "Ärztliche Fragen. Vorlesungen über allgemeine Therapie," in Achilles, Janz, Schrenk, and von Weizsäcker, eds., *Gesammelte Schriften in 10 Bänden,* book 5.

[45]Viktor von Weizsäcker, "'Euthanasie' und Menschenversuche," in *Gesammelte Schriften*, book 7: *Allgemeine Medizin: Grundfragen medizinischer Anthropologie*, 91–125.

[46][Discussion to] Wuttke-Groneberg, "Von Heidelberg nach Dachau," *Medizin in Nationalsozialismus,* 139–40.

[47]Kütemeyer, [Contribution to] "Podiumgespräch: Viktor von Weizsäcker—heute Viktor von Weizsäcker zum 100," in *Geburtstag (Beiträge zum Symposion der Universität Heidelberg, 1–3 May 1986)*, eds. P. Hahn and W. Jacob (Berlin, Heidelberg, New York: Springer-Verlag, 1986), 169.

[48]See Ibid., 187–88. The protest from the member of the audience is recorded on page 188.

[49]Christian Meier, *Vierzig Jahre nach Auschwitz: Deutsche Geschichtserringerung heute* (Munich: Deutschen Kunstverlag, 1987), cited in Ian Burma, *The Wages of Guilt: Memories of War in Germany and Japan* (New York: Farrar, Straus and Giroux, 1994), 69.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[50]For some references and discussion, see Anna Bramwell, *Ecology in the 20th Century: A History* (New Haven, Conn. and London: Yale University Press, 1989).

[51]I am indebted to Loren Goldner at the Center for European Studies, Harvard University, for bringing these details to my attention in an unpublished manuscript reviewing Faye's work.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

We cannot accept the body as a simple assemblage of invariant natural facts, either in its actual structure and functioning or in its representation. . . .Thinking of the body as active, as something that asserts or presents itself, opens the way to conceptualizing a relation between self and body not simply as the culturally selected interpretation and representation of stimuli but as an active engagement that takes place in the very sinews, nerves, and bones of our bodies. . . .It is in response to this extraordinarily complex process of engagement that human beings create narratives to express the relations between biology, individual sentience, culture, and history. . .situated knowledge about the body is never benign or without political meaning. . .it is a negotiation about private space and the colonization of the body and person by society.

Margaret Lock

From *Encounters with Aging: Mythologies of Menopause in Japan and North America*

Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1993

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Margaret Lock

Displacing Suffering: The Reconstruction of Death in North America and Japan

We all labor against our own cure;
for death is the cure of all diseases.

—Sir Thomas Browne, 1605–1682
"Urn Burial"

The boundaries which divide Life and Death are at best shadowy and vague. Who shall say where the one ends, and where the other begins?

—Edgar Allan Poe
"Premature Burial"

ONE VIVID MEMORY I RETAIN FROM WORLD WAR II is of an iron lung, massive and scary, that stood outside the hospital ward where I was taken after the family house was destroyed by a rocket fallen short of its London target. The iron lung was used, we kids knew all too well, for severe cases of polio, the infectious disease causing the greatest havoc at that time—scarlet fever and diphtheria having been brought largely under control, and tuberculosis confined (although only for the next forty years) to the "working classes" living in cities such as London, Birmingham, and Glasgow. Tales about the iron lung and who had died

Margaret Lock is Professor of Anthropology in the Departments of Social Studies of Medicine and Anthropology at McGill University, Canada.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

encased inside it circulated amongst us as we traded our shrapnel collections. Together with the nightly air raids, this contraption signaled that death lurked close by, and we made sick jokes about the technologies of both war and medicine to hide our terror.

The history of technology has usually been transmitted as a heroic tale about the conquest of the enemy, whether it be human or the natural world—a narrative of progress, and of the betterment of humanity in general. Of course, this dominant ideology has, for the past century at least, been accompanied by a counter discourse replete with ambivalence and warnings about the consequences of technology gone wild. In novels by Mary Wollstonecraft Shelley, Charles Dickens, and Kurt Vonnegut, among many others, we read of the havoc and misery that technology can create. The humanities and social sciences have also sounded regular warnings: Jacques Ellul claimed, for example, that "Technique has become *autonomous*; it has fashioned an omnivorous world which obeys its own laws and which has renounced all tradition,"[1] a sentiment echoed by John Kenneth Galbraith, Rene DuBos, and Martin Heidegger, each from their very different vantage points. Autonomy in the Kantian tradition is, of course, associated with the notion of free will, of an individual no longer subject to externally created laws. As Langdon Winner has pointed out, the very idea of an autonomous technology raises an "unsettling irony, for the expected relationship of subject and object is exactly reversed."[2] We humans have apparently lost out to the monster, but nevertheless rush eagerly ahead creating new devices. Like Shiva in Hindu iconography, Bryan Pfaffenberger suggests, technology, as seen through a modernist lens at least, is both creator and destroyer, an agent of future promise and of culture's destruction.[3]

It has generally been assumed that the major driving force behind the creation of technologies is to meet universal human needs. Herbert Marcuse was one who accepted this position, and, although he was concerned about the way in which the products of technological progress could be subverted under the name of rationality for ideological purposes, he nevertheless emphasized that mastery of nature could, if properly applied, be associated with freedom and autonomy.[4] Jürgen Habermas, building in part on Marcuse, insisted that an apparent consensus created around the supposed rationality of technological progress veils the inter-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

ests of powerful elites and removes debate from the public sphere.[5] Activities associated with technology are far from autonomous; on the contrary, they are intimately associated with the social and political order. Nevertheless, for both Marcuse and Habermas, since the creation of technology is a rational endeavor designed to meet universal human needs, there is nothing inherently questionable about the endeavor, provided that one goes about it in the right way.

G. Basalla and M. Sahlins take more radical positions, ones with which most anthropologists would agree; they stress that, aside from the fundamental requisites for sustaining life, it is culture and not nature that defines necessity. Necessity is not, after all, the mother of invention in any predetermined way; rather, human technology is a "material manifestation of the various ways men and women throughout time have chosen to define and pursue existence."[6] Technology is thus an integral part of the history of human aspirations and "the plethora of made things are a product of human minds replete with fantasies, longings, wants, and desires."[7] To simply link technology with power is to leave tacit the dominant modernist ideology of progress as an inherently rational pursuit to which culture makes no contribution.

It is easy to assume that among the many forms of technology those related to medicine exist, by definition, to meet basic human needs, in particular to reduce suffering and avert premature death. It is not surprising, perhaps, that aside from a concern about runaway expenditure and unwanted side effects on the body, there has been, until recently, relatively little resistance, in principle, to the development and application of medical technology. Despite the fact that the interests of powerful elites are often directly involved with the creation, manufacture, distribution, and application of medical technology,[8] the assumption that techniques that allow us to penetrate with increasing facility into the recesses of the body, together with those that supposedly relieve pain and prolong life, are inevitably for the good usually holds sway.

Over the past two decades it has become increasingly clear that biomedical technologies are by no means autonomous and, moreover, that the characterization of suffering, being culturally constructed, has a profound influence on their development, associated discourse, and application. It is in connection with the appli-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

cation of reproductive technologies, neonatal intensive care, genetic engineering, organ transplantation, and dying that contested domains have become most evident. That dispute has emerged around these dramatic manipulations should come as no surprise, for their application necessarily involves debate about tacit knowledge of what constitutes life and death.

In North America particularly, efforts to reduce suffering have habitually focused on control and repair of individual bodies. The social origins of suffering and distress, including poverty and discrimination, even if fleetingly recognized, are set aside, while effort is expended in controlling disease and averting death through biomedical manipulations.[9] Disputes with respect to biomedical technology usually revolve around the question of individual rights, autonomy, and justice. Activists have focused on abuse of individual patients by powerful elites, but very few commentators have stepped back and asked why, for example, infertility, menopause, and aging should be conceptualized as diseases, or why we struggle to save extremely premature infants but show little concern about the reasons for their premature birth or the social consequences of their continued existence.

This essay will focus on disputes in North America and Japan that are associated with the transplantation of major organs, together with the required redefinition of death necessary to implement this technology. Were it not for the development of the iron lung, an ostensibly autonomous, supremely utilitarian piece of technology, and its successor, the artificial respirator or ventilator, by means of which many people who can no longer breathe independently are kept alive, there would be no debate today about the reduction of suffering and the "saving" of lives through transplant technology. The artificial respirator clearly meets a basic need, but the uses to which it is put today have implications that reach far beyond the simple function of sustaining breathing on a temporary basis. Transplant technology, involving the removal of body fluids or parts from one person, and their insertion into a second person designated as needy, could never be mistaken for a value free endeavor—from its inception, at the very minimum, altruism was inevitably implicated.[10] Once certain patients on the artificial ventilator were harnessed to the heroic and showy technology of organ transplants, it became apparent, particularly

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

to those involved in medical practice, that there was some urgency to clarify exactly what is meant by biological death.

It would seem that there can be very little room for ideological posturing in connection with defining death—most of us raised in the contemporary West believe, I suspect, that death is a rather easily definable point of no return about which there can be little argument. Japan, like North America, is in theory a predominantly secular society, and is similarly driven by principles of rational order and scientific progress, principles that are evident in many aspects of the health-care systems on both sides of the Pacific. However, in Japan the possibility of tinkering with death has opened up the floodgates of a concern that reaches far beyond the demise of individuals, whereas in North America, by contrast, death was quietly redefined in 1968 by an elite group of Harvard physicians, and further modified in 1981 so that the concept of "whole-brain death" is now recognized in the Uniform Determination of Death Act as equivalent to the end of life. There was a brief period in the late 1960s when public concern about these changes was evident, but today, in the great majority of North American hospitals, brain death is accepted as the end of life, and the "harvesting" of organs from brain dead bodies has become routinized.

This contrast between North America and Japan invites comparison of the different forms the search takes in late modernity for the relief of suffering and the creation of a just and moral order, together with an examination of the relationship this search has to the production and application of scientific and technological knowledge. It is now apparent in most corners of the world, except perhaps in the heart of Leviathan, that science, in particular biomedicine, has come to be thought of by many as one form of neo-imperialism. In an era of struggles to create and recreate cultural identities and establish the grounds of cultural difference, the self-conscious possession of scientific knowledge, or, alternatively, its repudiation as inauthentic or culturally inappropriate, is explicitly made use of as an ideological tool to establish local power bases and authority. The production and circulation of technologies are, therefore, not only far from autonomous but, on the contrary, incite and foster culturally infused political activity. Suffering becomes grist for the mill of ideological dispute, and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

individual misery either disappears from sight or else is appropriated in the interests of dominant others.

REMAKING DEATH

After the development of artificial respirators, attempts were made to clarify precisely what constitutes death in several international forums. In both a 1966 CIBA symposium held in London and a 1968 World Medical Association conference held in Sydney, delegates worked under the assumption that what they were participating in was an unprecedented response to new medical technologies that made it necessary for the first time to "define" death.[11] However, in an article entitled "Back from the Grave," Martin Pernick has shown that concern about establishing the time of death is not new but rather is the latest round in an ongoing historical debate, repeatedly revitalized in the wake of new medical discoveries.[12] Pernick cited a 1940 article in *Scientific American* as a relatively recent example of this concern, in which it was stated that "frequent" errors in diagnosing death remained the cause of cases of premature burial,[13] and concluded that it is not simply responses to specific medical discoveries that have shaped the content of debates about death, but that professional interests and cultural values are inevitably implicated, precluding the possibility of arriving at a rational, universally acceptable definition.

Phillipe Ariès, writing about the history of death in the *longue durée,* claims that for at least a millennium there existed in Europe, until the thirteenth century, what he terms "tamed death." A familiarity with death associated with neither fear nor despair, "halfway between passive resignation and mystical trust," was, Ariès claims, characteristic of the time.[14] Destiny was revealed through death, and the dying person participated in a public ceremony in which "his own personality was not annihilated but put to sleep."[15] Ariès suggests that from medieval times on, death gradually became more individualized; an awareness of personal mortality and of failure associated with death was apparent in medieval European iconography. After the Enlightenment, Ariès detects another shift in *mentalité* in which death "became challenged and furtively pushed out of the world of familiar things."

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Interest shifted to the death of the other—to the "loved one"—and our own deaths became asocial and unnameable.

Ariès has been criticized, quite rightly I believe, for downplaying the individual "torment and pain" that must always have accompanied many deaths, and for giving undue emphasis to its social significance.[16] Ariès was, after all, primarily interested in the cultural representation of death, rather than in everyday experiences, individual or collective. Zygmunt Bauman has commented that, in principle at least, death was "tame" prior to the Age of Reason because it posed no challenge to the social order. Being preordained, the end of the life cycle and also eminently social, there was no need to fight death. For Bauman, shared knowledge about death, which he believes is incited by a universal awareness of mortality, provides the driving force for cultural creativity, a push for transcendence—"culture is about expanding temporal and spatial boundaries of being, with a view to dismantling them altogether. . .the first activity of culture relates to *survival*—pushing back the moment of death, extending the life-span."[17] Bauman suggests that the knowledge and fact of mortality drives the cultural construction of the idea of immortality—"mortality is ours without asking—but immortality is something we must build ourselves. Immortality is not a mere absence of death; it is *defiance* and denial of death."[18] Thus, the construction of immortality is, in Bauman's estimation, the major source of life's meaning in all societies, resulting in the transformation of biological death, "a fact of nature," into a cultural artifact, which in turn "offers the primary building material for social institutions and behavioral patterns crucial to the reproduction of societies in their distinctive forms."[19]

A contemporary scientific approach to death has, in theory, by painting itself into the cold corner where culture is no longer deemed relevant, done away with all meaning, save that a corpse indicates biological failure. Moreover, as is well known, from at least the time of Descartes, the living body gradually came to be understood in medicine as a kind of "animated corpse," since dissection was the primary means of aggregating facts about human biology.[20] Thus, mortality was medicalized in order to combat death and disease. Today death is "measurable" and legally recognizable as an absence of neuronal functioning or, alterna-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

tively, of respiration and a heartbeat. Having apparently been stripped of culture, death can no longer transcend biology to act as a touchstone for coming to terms with mortality. Instead, it is simply understood, in medicine at least, as biological failure, a waste:

> Death is primarily regarded as an illness or an aberration rather than something that is natural [and] the physician is supposed both to certify death and state its cause. . . .These certificates also illustrate the belief that although human beings die from many causes at once, it is always possible to isolate a single and precipitate cause of death. . . .Death is conceptualized as an ailment that is amenable to intervention.[21]

Narratives such as that of Ariès about a progression from a socially meaningful, preordained death to one where individual dying became the focus, and then to a vision of death as something to be conquered, are told from the vantage point of the *grand reçit*—as though cultures are monolithic, seamless wholes, and as though a neat cleavage exists between culture, a human creation, and nature, subject to timeless biological law. Ruth Richardson, in *Death, Dissection and the Destitute,* shows how in nineteenth-century England the "life strategies" of the common folk by no means coincided with the aspirations of those scientists who employed professional body snatchers to obtain corpses for dissection and autopsy. People went to great lengths to try to prevent the robbing of graves, anatomical dissection, and the commodification of corpses. For most citizens dissection was considered not only demeaning but literally cruel, and even in the medical literature there was much debate as to whether or not clinical detachment should be equated with inhumanity, although perhaps a "necessary inhumanity."[22] In *Middlemarch,* George Eliot has the townsfolk talk disparagingly and fearfully about Lydgate the "modern" doctor and his fascination with dissection.

The body in death *may* have been stripped of social and individual significance in the minds of pathologically oriented medical professionals but, for the majority of ordinary people living in nineteenth-century Europe, at least, death retained a meaning that transcended the physical demise of an individual. In theory, in the late twentieth century, by participating in the medicalization and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

sanitization of death—by virtually confining it to hospitals—we have capitulated to the view that death is essentially a biological event. This very capitulation is, of course, contingent upon a culturally created dominant ideology that understands the physical body as precultural, an aggregation of natural facts amenable to rational experiment and manipulation. Culture is left to deal, often rather peremptorily, with only the final disposal of the body, and the work of grief. Moreover, many writers confirm that we no longer know how to behave around those who are dying—the very process smells of failure and induces panic. Of course, a major paradox is evident because contemporary mass media is laden with images of violent deaths that leave nothing hidden or sanitized, but such garish endings belong to the other, not to ourselves, and perhaps actually facilitate the anesthetization of our own mortality. Nevertheless, there are now many signs of increasing public dispute about the confinement of death, and about the all-out battle to defeat it. As Martin Pernick points out, "Today, perhaps for the first time, public criticism involves both a fear of being wrongly declared dead, and a fear of being wrongly declared alive."[23]

MAKING DEATH USEFUL

In America the first major step in the most recent remaking of death was taken by an ad hoc committee of the Harvard Medical School in 1968. It is significant that this was accomplished shortly after the world's first heart transplant took place in South Africa in 1967. The group of physicians who comprised the committee declared unilaterally that individuals in a state of "irreversible coma," and diagnosed as having "brain death syndrome," could be declared dead.[24] Prior to this time, it was accepted simply by convention that death could only be medically established once the heart had stopped beating, but confusion arose when artificial respirators were brought into routine use, because they allow the heart to remain beating after integrated brain function has ceased. The committee gave two reasons for establishing a clear definition of death: *1)* that "increased burdens" on patients, families, and hospital resources were caused by "improvements in resuscitative and support measures," and *2)* that "obsolete criteria for the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

definition of death can lead to controversy in obtaining organs for transplantation."[25] Thus, reaching a medical consensus about a definition of brain death as the end of life was clearly linked from the outset to a demand for human organs. These debates captured some passing media and public attention.[26]

During the early 1970s, the concept of "brain death syndrome" was challenged in the courts. In one landmark case in Virginia in 1972 the jury ruled against the donor's family, who claimed that the transplant surgeons had been responsible for the death of their relative. Other court cases followed including several involving homicide victims, but none resulted in the prosecution of a doctor.[27] At the same time, a debate about medical practice was under way in the medical world itself as to which tests, if any, could be relied upon to confirm an individual doctor's opinion about brain death, and secondly as to who would act as "gatekeepers" to protect physicians from malpractice suits.[28] A Uniform Determination of Death Act was eventually declared in 1981, after extensive debate among the members of a President's Commission especially set up for that purpose. This Act was immediately supported by the American Medical Association and the American Bar Association, and was subsequently adopted over a number of years by the majority of state legislatures.

The President's Commission, in opposition to the position taken by a number of individual physicians, philosophers, and theologians (who were writing mostly in professional journals, rather than for the media), opted to further rationalize and update what they characterized as "obsolete" diagnostic criteria and to enshrine a definition of death in law, something that thus far had not been the situation.[29] The Commission recommended that a concept of "whole-brain death," equated with an "irreversible loss of all brain function," be adopted. This condition was carefully distinguished in the report from a "persistent vegetative state," as exemplified by patients such as Karen Ann Quinlan and Nancy Beth Cruzan, whose brain stems continued to function despite an irreversible loss of higher brain function. The earlier definition of "irreversible coma" left room for doubt as to whether patients such as these could be taken for dead, and the concept of whole-brain death sought specifically to clarify this point. Thus, physicians, in constructing a "uniform" death, deliberately set out to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

protect themselves against malpractice, while at the same time ensuring a source of organs for transplants from legally defined dead bodies.

Despite this effort, a number of publications appeared shortly after the Act was passed in which medical professionals, philosophers, and social scientists pointed out the numerous ways in which the wording of the Act is ambiguous. In particular, two criteria remain acceptable for the determination of death: irreversible cessation of circulatory and respiratory functions *or* irreversible cessation of all functions of the entire brain, including the brain stem. The philosopher David Lamb, in summarizing this controversy, suggests that ambiguity is present because the Commission wished to avoid a radical departure, a "paradigm shift," from what had been conventionally recognized as death prior to the invention of the artificial ventilator, while at the same time meeting the pragmatics demanded by the necessity of a legal definition.[30] One of the problems the Commission faced was to transform the *process* of dying into a clearly definable *event*—to establish death as a point in time. Pressure to remove organs as expediently as possible made the transformation of death into a recognizable, scientifically determinable event absolutely essential. As Roy Selby and Marilyn Selby had noted just prior to the Commission, "dying must never be confused with death."[31] Despite the apparent routinization of brain death as a diagnosis, and efforts to create uniformity in the determination of death, considerable doubt and debate continues to this day as to whether we are on an ethical slippery slope, and as to what actually constitutes death.[32] Thus, we remain, in Kuhn's terms, in a paradigm crisis, striving for commensurability but unable to achieve it.

This relatively quiet remaking of death has been masked throughout by a focus on the heroics of medicine and the prolongation of life. Two impending deaths are, of course, involved—that of the donor and that of the recipient—but the public imagination has been fired in North America by the idea of the "gift" of life. The life and death of the patient from whom organs will be "harvested" is left unmarked except as "donor" (although the use of anencephalic babies temporarily swayed this priority).[33] The media usually focuses our attention on the life that will be "saved," and particularly on the moments during and immediately after

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

surgery when the proclamation of success is made; survival rates beyond the first few weeks fail to make more than serendipitous news coverage, and very few people indeed know about the prognosis for transplant patients, long-term outcomes, or about their "quality of life" after surgery.

Between 1982 and 1992, the number of transplants performed in the United States tripled, and it is estimated that over thirty-five thousand Americans are currently living with a donated organ in their body.[34] Transplants of all kinds, many of them repeat attempts after rejection, are routinized procedures; the "cutting edge" of transplant technology is concerned with "cluster" transplants, brain tissue implants, and the paring down of large organs for use in infants and children. The current drive to "maximize" the availability of organs is grounded in the utilitarian assumption that organs must be made available for the greatest good of all and includes a major debate about whether the buying and selling of organs should be established. Discussion is focused on organ procurement, including what type of contract with potential donors and their families is most appropriate for making them more readily available;[35] whether adoption of a market model for obtaining organs is appropriate;[36] and whether the body should be understood as a form of property.[37]

It is evident, therefore, that whatever discussion takes place about the remaking of death in North America is being carried out after the fact of the routinization of organ transplants from brain dead donors, and is colored by the pressures that a perceived escalating "shortage" of organs adds to the debate. Moreover, public consciousness, molded by the media, is focused almost without exception on the heroics of transplants and the "saving" of life, a situation that Ivan Illich has characterized as a fetishization of life.[38] The health "fad," particularly evident in the United States, requiring constant personal vigilance and body control, together with the imbibing of medications (such as hormone replacement therapy) purported, among other claims, to extend life, are other facets of this fetishization.[39]

In contrast to debates about death prior to the introduction of the artificial respirator, the issue today is infinitely more complex, because there are now *two* deaths inextricably linked through the coincidental failure of their body parts. It is not unreasonable to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

assume that public concern about the death of the donor should have been powerful enough to limit the rather rapid routinization of major organ transplants; current biomedical ethics in North America, and to a lesser extent in Europe, are, after all, grounded in respect for autonomous individuals and their welfare. These values inevitably become somewhat unraveled at the seams with two patients and their competing rights to consider, and one might expect to see some evidence in the media of this conflict of interest, perhaps even a national debate similar to the one about abortion. Clearly this has not happened. Organ donors, as a class of people, are praised for their generosity and altruism—for the "gift of life"—but as individuals their deaths remain essentially unnoticed. *Apparently* we equate lack of brain function with the end of life, and we trust the medical profession in their judgment as to when exactly this takes place. Perhaps this situation should come as no surprise in a rational, secular society where it makes little sense to dwell on the misfortune of "neomorts," to use Willard Gaylin's graphic neologism;[40] perhaps it is simply more "healthy" to think of individuals "living" on in others, and to recognize transplants as a life saving technology—a device that not only sidesteps the failure of death, but seemingly vanquishes it.

In 1991, more than two thousand people were on the waiting list for heart transplants in the United States, and the number of donors has decreased in recent years. One transplant surgeon has talked of the "alarming number of patients who die waiting,"[41] a situation described as a "public health crisis."[42] But by no means does everyone understand this crisis in the same way. Leon Kass, for example, characterized the problem very differently in a recent article on the selling of organs:

> Now, embarked on the journey, we cannot go back. Yet we are increasingly troubled by the growing awareness that there is neither a natural nor a rational place to stop. Precedent justifies extension, so does rational calculation: we are in a warm bath that warms up so imperceptibly that we don't know when to scream.[43]

Few cultural commentators are as explicit as Kass, but doubts, although rarely publicly discussed, apparently extend well beyond critics situated within the medical world, as was clearly also the case in the nineteenth century. Renée Fox's assessment of a Gallup

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Poll taken in 1985, for example, is that "many respondents... expressed anxiety about the possibility that if they signed a donor card physicians might prematurely take steps to pronounce them dead, to surgically excise their organs, or even to hasten their death."[44] Another smaller survey revealed that the willingness of people who perceive themselves to be on the margins of society (in particular blacks) to become donors is lower than among the middle classes.[45] This finding has a macabre irony to it, since, from the point of view of surgeons, the "best" organs come from those who die in traffic accidents, gunshot wounds, knifings, and so on, among whom the numbers of young blacks and Hispanics are very high.

A recent study from Scandinavia shows that among an age-stratified, random sample of 1950 Swedish individuals, nearly 70 percent showed some discomfort about autopsy and organ donation. People reported, for example, that they were ill at ease at the thought of cutting up a dead body, and many were concerned that the patient might not be dead at the time of organ removal.[46] Not only is the public cautious, but several studies have shown that, in North America at least, many nurses and other medical staff are conflicted when it comes to identifying donors and approaching their families to obtain consent.[47] The fact that we cannot bring ourselves to simply talk of "death" but refer consistently to "brain death" clearly suggests that life is still present in the minds of most people;[48] continued usage of the term brain death is in itself an example of the ambiguity and uncertainty involved. These researchers have also pointed out that newspaper and television accounts regularly report that patients who have been declared brain dead later "die" when "life-support" measures are removed, and health professionals, they claim, regularly use terminology "that implies such patients die twice."[49]

THE SLIPPERY SLOPE OF PERSONHOOD

The President's Commission that culminated in the Death Act stated clearly that for death to be diagnosed all brain function must have ceased, including the reflexes controlled by the brain stem. At this point there is a lack of "neurological integration," and what is left is "no longer a functional or *organic* unity, but

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

merely a *mechanical* complex.[50] Richard Zaner has pointed out that, for whole-brain advocates, "it is the biological organism (or, more specifically, the physiological/anatomical nervous system) which is definitive for life and death, not the *person* whose organism (or nervous system) it is."[51] Zaner and the majority of the contributors to the book *Death: Beyond Whole Brain Criteria* believe that the Commission put the cart before the horse by trying to develop a concept of death out of a set of standardized medical tests while evading the central issue of *who* had died. In order for there to be a uniform statutory definition of human death there must first be, according to Zaner, a general consensus over what constitutes "personhood" or "personal identity."[52] The Commission, recognizing that no such consensus exists, pointed out that the issue has been debated for centuries, and explicitly sought to circumvent the problem by making a biological argument in which rationally conceived operational criteria and medical tests provide the answer. The response of Edward Bartlett and Stuart Youngner was that neither operational criteria nor valid tests can be decided upon unless a working definition is first established—namely a concept of what it *means* to die.[53] Such a definition has to be "societal," not biological they argued, since a permanent loss of "personhood" should be of central concern, rather than the demise of the body physical. With this in mind, Zaner concluded that "at the very least. . .the central issues inherent to any definition of death must be kept rigorously open."[54]

Definitions grounded in the idea of a loss of personhood have been characterized as "ontological" and contrasted with what are taken to be narrowly defined scientific definitions based on the state of brain function.[55] Lamb, a philosopher, is concerned that those who argue for a redefinition based on ontological criteria are in actuality appealing to the idea that a loss of higher brain function is equivalent to death. He points out that such arguments are concerned only with criteria that describe "the minimum necessary qualities for personhood, defined in terms of psychological abilities," and he asserts that a Cartesian dualism is present in such arguments, which assume the ethical cutoff point to be the moment when the "ghost" leaves the machine.[56]

Karen Gervais criticized Lamb in turn for placing too much reliance on a biological definition; Lamb, she states, understands

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

death as "a fact awaiting discovery," and she characterizes the ontological approach, in contrast, as based in ethical reflection.[57] Lamb has countered this rebuttal by claiming that whole-brain death is an "ethically superior formulation" because "in matters of life and death, objective testable criteria concerning presence or absence of vital functions are more reliable than indeterminate assessments concerning the quality of residual life, or speculations regarding personhood, or utilitarian requirements for transplant organs."[58] Lamb is clearly concerned that overriding interests about the supposed crisis precipitated by an "organ shortage" will seize the day and send us on our way down the slippery slope to redefining death in response to perceived needs. He adds that a whole-brain death formulation does not dispute the loss of all capacity for integrated mental activity, but because the "essence" of personal identity is an elusive concept, which in any case resides in a different logical space than the cessation of vital functions, it is certainly not one on which doctors should rely in making decisions about death. Personal identity, after all, does not have any specific anatomical location, insists Lamb, but is a quality akin to "spirit," "will," or "soul," with religious, legal, and political associations. Loss of personhood or moral integrity are cultural conceptions and are, therefore, subject to a wide range of interpretation and open to easy manipulation and abuse where pragmatism and utilitarianism hold sway. Norman Fost, arguing along similar lines, has asserted that the problem with utilitarian justifications for redefining death, exemplified by the recently enacted Uniform Determination of Death, is that constant redefinition is invited whenever utility requires it, creating "not only instability, but the perception and possibility that unwanted persons can be defined out of existence [whenever] it serves the greater good."[59]

Given this climate, Lamb and other supporters of whole-brain death believe it is imperative to search out "precise" measurement of neurological functioning because they are suspicious of a culturally produced, psychologically driven interpretation of life, and see less of an opening for abuse when using a tightly defined, biologically based definition (provided in practice there is an under diagnosis of death whenever there is doubt). This argument assumes, of course, not only that death is measurable, but also that such measurements are accurate and unfailingly replicable. A recent

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

survey conducted among 195 physicians and nurses produced some disquieting results. Youngner and colleagues remind us that the concept of whole-brain death was initially accepted because it was assumed that "in the hands of competent physicians" a diagnosis of irreversible loss of all brain function is clinically practical and completely reliable. However, they found that only 35 percent of survey respondents both knew the whole brain criteria for death and were able to apply it correctly.[60] One fifth of these respondents were directly involved in making diagnoses about death at that time. Moreover, when asked to give their personal opinions about concepts of death and then apply them to hypothetical cases, 58 percent of the respondents did not use a concept of death consistently, and furthermore personal concepts varied widely among health-care professionals.[61]

Because of possible conflict of interest, neurosurgeons and neurologists are today expected to do nothing more than suggest to the families of their patients, once brain death has been declared, that they might think about donation of organs. Transplant surgeons and physicians, for their part, may not enter the scene until after brain death has been declared on two separate occasions. This ruling, not applied when transplants were first performed, seems eminently sensible, but it means that involved medical specialists know little of each other's interests and concerns in the application of these technologies. Of more importance, perhaps, it ensures that the failure of death is rapidly transformed, the bereaved family willing, into a celebration of immortality.

STRIVING FOR CONSENSUS: THE JAPANESE DEBATE

There are some remarkable differences at the present time between Japan and North America with respect to organ transplants: whereas, for example, in America nearly two thousand heart transplants took place in 1990, in Japan there were none. It is obvious that this difference cannot be explained by a lack of technology or skills, or by a shortage of economic resources on the part of the Japanese. So, cultural differences *must* be at work. Initially, my inclination was to ask what it is about Japanese and *not* North American culture, experience, and social organization that could account for this discrepancy. What widely shared knowledge do

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the Japanese possess that makes them resistant to the technologically aided extension of human life? This approach seemed particularly pertinent because Japan utilizes and exports more complex medical technology than any other nation in the world.[62] Is this cultural difference to be found at the level of attitudes towards the mastery of nature or, more specifically, to a concern about tinkering with the bodies of the dying and the dead? Is Japan perhaps not as secular and rational, not as "modern" as its outward appearance leads us to believe? Alternatively, is it perhaps due to cultural influences on the actual production of scientific discourse about death and dying in Japan? Or is the difference due largely to the way in which the power and interests of doctors are played out, and the form of institutionalization that medicine takes in Japan? Or is it some combination of the above?

It is relatively easy to take off from this point, embracing an implicit assumption that there is something inherently odd about not striving to "save" lives in a secular society with neither economic nor technological constraints; to set out, therefore, to scrutinize the relics of tradition, survivals from an archaic past lurking in Japanese late modernity that account for this anomaly. But such an approach violates the majority of interpretations given by Japanese on this subject, many of whom flatly deny that culture, that is, the "culture of tradition" is involved and argue instead for a more pragmatic explanation in which politics and power relations among the professions, and between the medical world and the public, are implicated.[63] Equally important, by focusing on Japan as the anomaly, North American assumptions about the good and just society remain unproblematized and thus, implicitly, the norm for the contemporary world, something that also concerns many Japanese participants as they argue their version of the brain death debate.

Shortly after the world's first heart transplant was conducted in South Africa, several attempts were made in other locations to carry out the same procedure, including Sapporo, Hokkaido in 1968. As in other parts of the world, the Sapporo procedure initially produced an accolade from the media, and was heralded as a dramatic medical triumph. However, several months later, the physician in charge, Dr. Wada, was arraigned on a murder charge and only acquitted after six years of wrangling. The majority of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Japanese believe in retrospect that the patient whose heart was removed was not brain dead, and that the recipient, who died two and a half months after the operation, was not sufficiently in need of a new heart to have undergone the procedure in the first place.[64] As part of the ongoing national debate about brain death, discussion of the case was formally reopened in 1991, and the chairman of the Japanese Medical Association, testifying before a government committee, reported that twenty-three years ago, right after the removal of the supposedly ineffective heart from the recipient patient, it had been tampered with, indicating that the involved doctors may have tried to exaggerate the degree of its deterioration.[65] The case is now considered in retrospect as a barbarous piece of medical experimentation carried out by a doctor who received a good portion of his training in America and is, moreover, described as self-aggrandizing.

There have been a good number of other cases in connection with organ transplants where the Japanese medical profession has not shown up in a good light. One, for example, involved a highly controversial kidney/pancreas transplant at Tsukuba University in which organs were removed from a young mentally retarded woman diagnosed as brain dead, but neither she nor her parents had given permission for her to be a donor.[66]

CONTESTED DEFINITIONS OF DEATH

The first definition of brain death in Japan was formulated by the Japan Electroencephaly Association in 1974. Probably in response to the much publicized case of the mentally retarded patient, the Life Ethics Problem Study Parliamentarians League, composed of twenty-eight Diet members and forty-five other professionals, was established in 1985, and after one year endorsed the need for legislation about brain death.[67] In the same year, the Ministry of Health and Welfare set up a Brain Death Advisory Council, the final report of which contained the definition of brain death made use of in Japan today.[68] This report is explicit, however, that "death cannot be judged by brain death." Nevertheless, the diagnosis is frequently applied, not as a signal to turn off the respirator, but to prepare relatives for an impending death.[69]

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The report spurred other involved groups to make pronouncements about their positions. In January 1988, after two years of meetings by a working group, the directors of the Japanese Medical Association voted unanimously to accept brain death as the termination of human life. Despite this decision, there remains a lack of agreement among the representatives of medical specialties and also among individual physicians who are deeply divided on the issue. The politically outspoken Japan Association of Psychiatrists and Neurologists (some of the sixty-nine hundred members of whom are responsible for making brain death diagnoses) fear that if brain death is equated with death, the handicapped, mentally impaired, and disadvantaged will be at risk of being diagnosed prematurely in a greedy desire to get at their organs. In their 1988 report they state that a major problem is with the difficulty in deciding when brain function is irreversibly lost.[70]

Some physicians have joined members of the public to form the highly visible Patients' Rights Committee, whose interests range well beyond the question of brain death. Under the leadership of the flamboyant Dr. Honda from the prestigious department of internal medicine at Tokyo University, they have recently filed several lawsuits charging murder when organs have been removed from brain dead patients, one of which was in connection with the Tsukuba University case described above. The Public Prosecutor's Office has not thus far reached a decision in connection with any of these cases, but has thrown two of them out of court, stating that there is no public consensus in Japan as to how to define death.[71] Eric Feldman believes that because, after almost seven years, complaints made by the Patients' Rights Committee remain unresolved, hesitation on the part of doctors to forge ahead with transplantation is reinforced.[72]

As a result of the unresolved debate, copiously documented by the media, the government felt compelled in late 1989 to set up a Special Cabinet Committee on Brain Death and Organ Transplants in order to bring about closure. This committee, composed of fifteen members from various walks of life, was charged to make a report to the Prime Minister by 1991, and its very formation signaled to the public that the government was ready to support a move to legalize brain death as the termination of life. The group was so deeply divided that for a while it appeared that

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

it would never produce anything more than an interim report, but in January 1992 a final report was forthcoming. In principle the members should have reached consensus, but this they could not achieve. The majority position is that brain death is equivalent to human death, that organ transplants from brain dead donors are acceptable, and that the current definition of brain death as formulated by the Ministry of Health is appropriate. The minority position made it clear that they wished to have the social and cultural aspects of the problem fully debated; in their opinion the discussion thus far had been largely confined to "scientific" information, which they believed to be inadequate.[73] The public was kept fully apprised of just who appeared before the committee. It was evident that many of those who testified, including certain scientists and doctors, argued against the acceptance of brain death, but nevertheless the majority of the committee eventually moved to support its approval.[74]

Throughout, the Japan Federation of Bar Associations (*Nichibenren)* has maintained its position against the acceptance of brain death as the termination of life. It has expressed concern for the "sanctity of life," and about possible medical "experimentation." The Federation has also pointed out that there may be unforeseen consequences in connection with inheritance claims, and a lack of public consensus on the issue was noted by them.[75] The day following the announcement of the Cabinet Committee report, the Ministry of Justice, the National Police Agency, and the Public Prosecutor's Office all reiterated their continued resistance to brain death.[76]

The Patients' Rights Committee, lawyers, the police, several television producers, and many authors of newspaper articles and books on the subject of brain death, and even a number of medical professionals appear to be publicly contesting the authority of transplant surgeons. What they usually cite as their principal cause for concern is a lack of trust in the medical teams who will make decisions about cases of brain death; they believe that in the rush to retrieve organs the process of dying will be curtailed or even misdiagnosed. The opposition is explicitly opposed to the secrecy and arrogance of some members of the medical profession, and points out that patients and their families are vulnerable to exploitation.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Certain of these same opponents of brain death are pushing for informed consent, together with a frank disclosure and discussion of diagnoses with patients, neither of which activities are by any means routinely established in Japan. This contest, therefore, although at one level a debate about the accuracy and replicability of scientific decision-making, is also a challenge to the hegemony of invested authority, exerted in what is characterized by several of the challengers as a traditionally Japanese way, whereby subjects are rendered passive and expected to comply with medical regimen without question.

One of the national newspapers, *Asahi Shinbun,* recently described the medical world as "irritated" with government dithering, and doctors sense that their international reputations as outstanding surgeons are fading. At the annual meeting of the Japanese Medical Association held in Kyoto in 1990, which I attended, two plenary sessions and several smaller panels were given over to brain death and organ transplants. The principal paper givers were physicians who had lived and worked for some time in the United States and who had practiced transplant surgery while there. Aside from the scientific part of their presentations, every one of them strongly asserted that Japanese medicine is suffering because of the national uproar over brain death. They all showed slides of themselves standing, usually in surgical garb, side by side with American transplant surgeons together with happy, lively patients who had recently received organ transplants. These presentations were one of the few occasions, until very recently, when attention was focused on the situation of patients whose lives might be prolonged, however temporarily, by transplant procedures.[77]

REACHING PUBLIC CONSENSUS

Taking place in concert with government, professional, and media discussion is the most persistent search for a national consensus (*kokuminteki gôi)* among the Japanese public that has taken place to date on any subject. There were at least ten national surveys about brain death and organ transplants between 1983 and 1992. Over the years the number of people who recognize brain death has increased from 29 percent to nearly 50 percent. In all of the surveys, a paradox is evident, however: many people approve of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

organ transplants from brain dead patients although they themselves do not accept brain death as the end of life. It seems that the Japanese public is willing to allow transplants to take place, even though they personally would not be comfortable with participating in such a procedure.

The results of opinion polls are usually used by those who are against brain death to support their arguments, since it has been frequently reiterated that public consensus must be reached before brain death can be nationally recognized. Nevertheless, one is left with the feeling, voiced by many members of the Japanese public, that the whole exercise of repeatedly surveying the nation is essentially a farce, and that the idea of trying to achieve a simple consensus on such an inflammatory subject is essentially without meaning.

CULTIVATING THE NATURAL

Clearly, the Japanese public's mistrust of physicians contributes to the brain death "problem," but why has *this* issue more than any of the other pressing problems in connection with biomedical technology captured the attention of the nation for nearly thirty years? Discussions about informed consent, euthanasia, and the new reproductive technologies appear in the media with increasing frequency today, but not nearly to the same extent as the topic of brain death and organ transplants, debate about which can become exceedingly vituperative.[78]

A perusal of the over five hundred articles, books, and newspaper editorials published on brain death and organ transplants since 1986 reveals that brain death is reported to be too "unnatural" *(fushizen)* to be called "death," for example,[79] or that it is "contrary to basic human feelings." The idea of "controlling" death is also described as going against nature.[80] Organ transplants are characterized in one book as *egetsu nai* (a powerful vernacular expression indicating that something is foul, ugly, or revolting) and *chi ma mire* (bloody).[81] Arguments against the institutionalization of organ transplants requiring a brain dead donor appear, therefore, to raise major concerns about interfering with the natural order. However, for the most part these concerns remain articulated only as emotion-laden adjectives or else by indirect allusions to the "cold," over-rational "West."

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Contemporary Japanese attitudes towards scientific knowledge and its associated technology are difficult to pin down because of their intimate connection to a widespread ambivalence about the process of Japanese modernization. Moreover, Japanese attitudes towards modernization cannot be understood in isolation from ever changing interpretations, produced both inside and outside the country, about the relationship of Japan to the West. The form that current debate takes about body technologies in Japan, therefore—the feasibility of tinkering with the margins between culture and nature, and the very definition of those margins—reflect more general concerns about modernization, postmodernization, and "Westernization."

In Japan throughout the late nineteenth century, the eager quest for Western science and technology "was grounded in [a] sense of cultural certitude";[82] an awareness that the "core" or the bass note (*koso*) of Japanese culture would remain unaffected. Technology, self-consciously aligned with the other, was placed in opposition to culture in this discourse, and epitomized by the platitudes *wakon yōsai* (Japanese spirit and Western technology) and *tōyō dōtoku, seiyō gijutsu* (Eastern morality, Western technology). Tetsuo Najita and others have shown how this confidence in the endurance of "traditional" culture was gradually eroded. Early this century and again after World War II internal tension erupted over Japan's increasing technological sophistication and internationalization.[83] Fears about an imminent collapse of the nation's cultural heritage became commonplace, and one reaction was a reassertion of cultural essentialism.[84]

For many Japanese, the specter of Westernized individualism, utilitarianism, and super-rationalism triggers emotional responses that push them towards a rhetoric of difference, even as they buck at its inherently nationalistic underpinnings. This is the discursive background against which the brain death debate is taking place. Appellations such as "tradition" and "religion" smack of superstition and premodern sentimentality to a large number of people, but Japan is repeatedly described by internal commentators and outside observers alike as having undergone a unique form of modernization and hence of being quintessentially different.

Those who have doubts about the introduction of new technologies have to struggle very hard, therefore, to find a suitable

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

language with which to articulate their discomfort. Criticizing a "Western," "scientific," interventionist approach to nature makes one vulnerable to accusations of Japanese essentialism and antirationalism. Equally difficult to voice is criticism of the epistemological grounds on which a scientific determination of death is constructed, for this smacks of antirationalism. Criticizing the unethical behavior of the Japanese press and activities of Japanese doctors as lacking standardization and quality control is rather easily justified and, almost everyone agrees, is a valid critical stance. Thus, the issue is politicized, but the possible contribution of culture to the argument is usually ignored or explicitly rejected.[85]

Those who choose to make a cultural argument about redefining death usually defend the status quo on the grounds that as a nation the Japanese do not like "unnatural" things, and posit an essential difference from the "West," leading to very dangerous territory. However, one or two attempts have been made to create a more nuanced argument based on the structure of Japanese social relationships. Masahiro Morioka suggests, for example, that rather than focusing on the standardization of brain death, as does so much of the literature, attention should be shifted to the brain dead person at the center of a nexus of characteristically Japanese human relations both familial and medical. He deliberately seeks to redefine the problem as social rather than clinical.[86] The anthropologist E. Namihira analyzes Japanese attitudes towards the dead body to account for resistance to brain death and organ transplants—an argument that highlights the cultural construction of nature, but one to which the majority of Japanese intellectuals with whom I have talked have reacted with a good deal of resistance.[87]

The entire commentary about tampering with definitions of death is, therefore, complex, emotional, and fraught with ideological pitfalls because debate cannot be divorced from other pressing issues of national import. A tension between technology as both creator and destroyer of culture is evident. Not surprisingly, negotiating a moral high ground has thus far proved impossible, not least when people try to shelter behind scientific justifications for their arguments.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

DISCOURSE ON SOCIAL DEATH

In Japan biological death is usually understood as a process, not as a point in time.[88] Moreover, a distinction is made by many commentators between biological and social death, believed to take place some time after the demise of the physical body. Although few commentators talk explicitly about a Confucian-derived belief in the ancestors, its influence on the brain death debate is apparent. Preliminary interviews I conducted with fifty Japanese informants, men and women, made it clear that the fate of the body after biological death, together with a concern about the recently dead, may contribute to a reluctance both to donate and to receive organs. Everyone interviewed stated that they no longer believe in the elaborate prewar ancestor system, integral to the extended family. Nevertheless, over half of the respondents indicated that they carry out regular, often daily rituals in their homes and at the graves of their deceased parents and grandparents. Most pointed out that family and social obligations require that the bodies and memories of deceased family members be treated with respect.

A 1981 survey showed that the majority of Japanese (between 60 and 70 percent) believe that when and where one is born and dies is determined by destiny, and that this should not be changed by human intervention.[89] Appropriate separation of the soul from the body at the moment of death is central to the Japanese belief about dying;[90] in a recent survey, 40 percent responded that they believe in the continued existence after death of *reikon* (soul/spirit).[91] This same survey showed that among young people between the ages of sixteen and twenty-nine, belief in the survival of the soul is particularly prevalent.[92]

From an analysis of the very moving narratives provided by relatives of victims of the Japan Air Lines crash in the mountains of Gunma prefecture in 1985, Namihira concluded that the spirit of the deceased is often anthropomorphized and is believed to experience the same feelings as the living. Hence, relatives have an obligation to make the spirit "happy" and "comfortable." People were in agreement that it is important for a dead body to be brought home, and that a corpse should be complete (*gotai manzoku*), otherwise the spirit will suffer and may cause harm to the living. Namihira cites the results of a 1983 questionnaire by a

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

committee set up to encourage the donation of bodies for medical research: Of 690 respondents, 66 percent stated that cutting into dead bodies is repulsive and/or cruel, and also shows a lack of respect for the dead. Against these figures, the numbers of people agreeing to autopsies has steadily increased in recent years,[93] as has the number of people willing to go abroad to obtain organ transplants[94] as well as those willing to recognize brain death as the end of life. Clearly, the population is deeply divided about attitudes towards the dying and the recently dead, and many would, in any case, probably state one thing in response to a survey and actually do another when confronted with personal suffering.

In Japan the boundary between the social and the natural was never very rigidly defined—the ancestors were immortalized as entities who continue to act in the everyday world, but eventually become part of an animized natural order, forming a vital bridge between the spiritual, social, and natural domains. Despite the Confucian origins of the ancestors, the philosopher Akira Omine links the type of animism with which the ancestors are associated to Shinto, the indigenous religion of Japan, which represents, he believes, "quirky local beliefs cherished in our peculiarly unspiritual island country and incomprehensible to most of the world."[95] Shinto, associated with the Emperor and with nationalism, has an exceedingly delicate status among large numbers of liberal minded Japanese today. Omine goes on to claim that although animism affects attitudes about the dead, it "simply lacks the depth of vision to address a challenge like that of redefining the boundary between life and death."[96] It seems that Omine, in common with many of his intellectual colleagues, would like to keep formalized religious belief (but not necessarily spirituality) out of the brain death discussion.

Comments such as those of Omine make it evident that everyday discourse and practices about social death produce considerable anxiety among certain Japanese who wish their nation to be understood as eminently rational, in particular because such discourse is grist for the mill of commentators (both inside and outside Japan) who hope to signal that "tradition" and the "old moral order," including the ancestors who signify continuity above all else, is intact and functioning in the Japan of late modernity.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

When it comes to discussing organ transplantation, many people point out that formalized gift giving remains central to ongoing relationships of reciprocity in Japan, and continues to contribute to the moral order. The idea of receiving an organ that had been anonymously donated would be very difficult for many to accept without incurring an enormous sense of guilt and without violating a sense of what is correct behavior.[97] In addition, a few people with whom I have talked have clearly been physically repulsed by the very idea of organ transplantation. For them, transfer of body parts among unrelated people extends beyond the bounds of what is "natural" and entails a completely unacceptable mixing of self and other. Certain scientists also see things this way, for transplant technology has explicitly been described by an eminent Japanese immunologist as the conjoining of the "self" and "nonself."[98] A similar, rather special, manifestation of this concern was demonstrated around the dying Emperor Shôwa, who received many blood transfusions during the last year of his life, all of which had to be supplied by family members. It should be noted that there is little or no opposition to organ transplants from living, related donors, suggesting that it is an inappropriate mixing of self and other beyond the "natural" bounds of the family that causes discomfort.

Although abortion is acceptable to most Japanese citizens, and is usually characterized as an unfortunate but necessary intervention at times, use of fetal tissue for research and transplants is not permitted. Fetuses are thought of by most people as living and conceptually inseparable from the body of the pregnant woman. However, since a fetus has no independent social or moral standing it is not fully human. Many Japanese are nevertheless concerned about mistreatment of fetal tissue, although its status is less problematic than that of a brain dead individual. Concern is evident about the traumatic death of a fetus, especially on the part of Japanese women, and lucrative Buddhist-based rituals are enacted all over Japan to appease the souls of aborted fetuses.[99] Thus, traumatic and sudden death, together with the mixing of self and other, both before birth and later in the life cycle, are culturally sensitive and contested events in Japan. However, the politics of solid organ transplants, coupled with a pervasive concern about respect for the deceased, means that the brain death debate takes

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

center stage, whereas abortion continues to be accepted quite simply as an unfortunate but unavoidable part of human life.

LATE MODERNITY, CULTURAL IDENTITY, AND THE OTHER

It is striking that the culture and values of the "West" are scrutinized in the brain death debate in Japan. We hear and read much about Christianity (but nothing of Judaism), about rationality and the brain as the center of the body, about altruism, individualism, and even selfishness—all values associated with the "West." But, despite a call to move beyond a discussion of scientific decision-making, as noted above, Japanese values are not often examined explicitly. It has been suggested by some that if the original heart transplant, the Wada case, had not flared up into a legal battle, the entire brain death debate may never have surfaced, and the medical world would simply have gone ahead unilaterally as they did in North America. Others strongly disagree with this position, although many believe that brain death will be made legally acceptable in Japan fairly soon and that the search for a national consensus is simply a placatory exercise before those in power go ahead to institutionalize organ transplants; indeed, a private members bill has recently been submitted for consideration to the Diet.

Thoughtful people recognize that while brain death is obviously a sensitive topic, the definition of death, although clearly the nub of the debate, has a metaphorical significance that triggers a cascade of ideological repercussions reaching far beyond the medical world. The present dilemma for progressive thinkers in Japan is how to dispose of the remnants of patriarchal and patronage thinking—the reactionary part of the Confucian heritage—without drawing on a language that single-mindedly pursues the entrenchment of the "Western" values of individual autonomy and rights. It is in this context that the argument about brain death is taking place, and, as in the West, it is an overwhelmingly secular argument in which representatives of religious organizations are, for the most part, remarkably absent.[100] At its most abstract level, the current angst is a manifestation of the ceaseless, restless, contradictory debate about Japan and the West, a debate that has proceeded unabated for something approaching two hundred years, in which the "West" has come to be associated with ideas having

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

universal application, whereas Japanese ideas are linked to uniqueness. As one pediatrician has recently put it, "Why should we mindlessly imitate Westerners? We would only be turning ourselves into white Westerners with Asian faces."[101]

Although a certain amount of genuine passion is aroused over the fate of those individuals whose lives are directly involved, little is heard from patients and their families, whether they be potential donors or receivers. Recently, however, a woman whose daughter will soon require a liver transplant, when interviewed by *Newsweek* for its Japanese edition, complained, "Why do we have to suffer just because we have the misfortune to be Japanese?"[102] Since the beginning of 1994, the year in which an international conference on organ transplantation was deliberately staged in Japan by surgeons keen to break through the current impasse, the fate of those patients not able to receive transplants, together with those who have gone abroad to obtain organs, has started to capture the imaginations of the media and the Japanese public. An extraordinarily moving art exhibition, at which pictures created by Japanese children who had received organs were exhibited beside accounts of their medical histories, was held in Kyoto in conjunction with the transplant conference.

Thus far, the debate has not been about individual human suffering, but rather a manifestation of the struggle by citizens and activists from a whole range of political persuasions about moral order in contemporary Japan. Those who recognize brain death as the end of life usually accept a modernist ideology of technologically driven progress in the relief of human suffering, while many (but not all) of those against embrace an argument about the essentialist difference of Japan and exhibit concerns about a perceived loss of moral order. Very slowly and painfully forced, it seems to me as I interview and observe Japanese who are dealing directly with this problem in ethics committees, citizens groups, and so on, by a genuine concern about the suffering of individuals, a middle ground is emerging. Nevertheless, extremists on both sides remain highly vocal and influential. Those arguing for a modulated position usually start with case studies rather than from abstract propositions, or from the simple assumption that biomedical technology is intrinsically good. Some people arguing for a middle ground actively seek to avoid the silencing of indi-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

vidual suffering in the name of nationalism, or professional or governmental interest, but these voices are only just becoming audible, and are not great in number as yet. It is notable, however, that even in modulated discussion grounded in everyday experience, the split between those for and against the acceptance of brain death remains strikingly evident. Even when the suffering of potential recipients is clearly recognized this does not mean that involved Japanese will necessarily agree that transplants are an unequivocal good. When I asked one pediatrician, often visible in the media, who deals with dying children every day, why she remains adamantly opposed to the introduction of organ transplants from brain dead donors, she acknowledged that Buddhism, although of no apparent consequence in her daily life, is probably an influence since she believes deeply that death is in some way preordained and that we humans should not play God. Although Buddhist related, the sentiments of this pediatrician may not be very far removed from those of people living in other parts of the world today, but when contextualized in the current debate about death in Japan they reveal the extent to which "needs" and "suffering" and our responses to those marked as "suffering" and "needy" remain shaped by culturally derived values.

The talk today in the United States is of "rewarded gifting" and "organ wastage," signs of the urgent need to procure more and more organs in a steady move towards the large-scale commodification of human parts. In our haste in North America we talk little about the flow of organs from the poor to the rich, from the Third World to the First World, and even less of possible atrocities, despite documentation of such by Amnesty International. Leon Kass has described this process as a "coarsening of sensibilities and attitudes" and adds that ". . .there is a sad irony in our biomedical project, accurately anticipated in Aldous Huxley's *Brave New World*: We expend enormous energy and vast sums of money to preserve and prolong bodily life, but in the process our embodied life is stripped of its gravity and much of its dignity. This is, in a word, progress as tragedy."[103] We also keep death firmly under wraps and, despite evidence of societal disagreement and misunderstanding about the new death we have created, refuse to debate this issue in public. Perhaps we can learn directly from the Japanese case on this point, if nothing else, and begin to recognize

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

once again that mortality is not merely biological demise. In striving to make the brain dead immortal by stating that they live on in others as donated organs, we in fact collapse the very culture/nature distinction that made the yardstick for justifying brain death in the first place. Surely such a contradiction deserves debate.

The monster is amongst us, and we need more courage than Frankenstein exhibited if we are to use technology to relieve suffering in an equitable manner; a first step is to recognize how easily suffering can be used in the service of ideological and political ends. On both sides of the Pacific, if debate about technology and the body is reduced to a confirmation or otherwise of scientific accuracy, or to a discussion of political interest, or even, for that matter, to one of ethical correctness, we will consistently lose sight of the necessity to step further back so that more difficult questions can be posed. Prominent among them is a consideration of the relationship of tacit, culturally shaped knowledge to the production of scientific knowledge and its practices, together with the associated contests, within and among societies, about legitimization of such knowledge as truth. Most important, of course, is the effect of such discussion on the recognition of suffering and what, if any, condition should be assigned as beyond the realm of cultural intervention.

ACKNOWLEDGMENT

This research was funded by the Social Sciences and Humanities Research Council of Canada, grant number 410–93–0544.

ENDNOTES

[1]Jacques Ellul, *The Technological Society,* trans. John Wilkinson (New York: Alfred A. Knopf, 1964).

[2]Langdon Winner, *Autonomous Technology: Technics-out-of-Control as a Theme in Political Thought* (Cambridge, Mass.: The MIT Press, 1977), 16.

[3]Bryan Pfaffenberger, "Social Anthropology of Technology," *Annual Review of Anthropology* 21 (1992): 495.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[4]Herbert Marcuse, *One-Dimensional Man: Studies in the Ideology of Advanced Industrial Society* (Boston, Mass.: Beacon Press, 1964).

[5]Jürgen Habermas, *Toward a Rational Society* (Boston, Mass.: Beacon Press, 1970).

[6]G. Basalla, *The Evolution of Technology* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1988), 14.

[7]Ibid., 14.

[8]Andrew Kimbrell, *The Human Body Shop: The Engineering and Marketing of Life* (San Francisco, Calif.: Harper San Francisco, 1993). Margaret Lock, *Encounters With Aging: Mythologies of Menopause in Japan and North America* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1993), 341ff.

[9]Arthur Kleinman, *The Illness Narratives: Suffering, Healing and the Human Condition* (New York: Basic Books, 1988). Mary-Jo DelVecchio Good, Paul E. Brodwin, Byron J. Good, and Arthur Kleinman, eds., *Pain as Human Experience: An Anthropological Perspective* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1992).

[10]Renée C. Fox and Judith P. Swazey, *Spare Parts: Organ Replacement in American Society* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1992).

[11]L. A. Rado, "Death Redefined: Social and Cultural Influences on Legislation," *Journal of Communication* 31 (1981): 41–47.

[12]Martin Pernick, "Back from the Grave: Recurring Controversies Over Defining and Diagnosing Death in History," in Richard Zaner, ed., *Death: Beyond Whole-Brain Criteria* (Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers, 1988), 17.

[13]Ibid.

[14]Phillipe Ariès, *Western Attitudes Towards Death: From the Middle Ages to the Present*, trans. Patricia M. Ranum (Baltimore, Md.: The Johns Hopkins University Press, 1974), 103.

[15]Ibid., 104.

[16]Norbert Elias, *The Loneliness of the Dying*, trans. Edmund Jephcott (Oxford: Basil Blackwell Ltd., 1985).

[17]Zygmunt Bauman, *Mortality, Immortality and Other Life Strategies* (Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1992), 5.

[18]Ibid., 7.

[19]Ibid., 9.

[20]Drew Leder, *The Absent Body* (Chicago, Ill.: The University of Chicago Press, 1990).

[21]Lindsay Prior, *The Social Organization of Death: Medical Discourse and Social Practices in Belfast* (London: Macmillan, 1989), 32, 33.

[22]Ruth Richardson, *Death, Dissection and the Destitute* (London: Penguin, 1988), 31.

[23]Pernick, "Back from the Grave: Recurring Controversies Over Defining and Diagnosing Death in History," 58.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[24]Ad Hoc Committee of the Harvard Medical School to Examine the Definition of Death, "A Definition of Irreversible Coma," *Journal of the American Medical Association* 205 (1968): 337–40.

[25]Ibid., 337.

[26]See, for example, "When is Death?," *Time*, 16 August 1968.

[27]R. Simmons et al., *Gift of Life: The Effect of Organ Transplantation on Individual, Family, and Societal Dynamics* (New Brunswick, N.J.: Transaction Books, 1987).

[28]Peter Black, "Brain Death," *The New England Journal of Medicine* 229 (1978): 338–44.

[29]George J. Annas, "Brain Death and Organ Donation: You Can Have One Without the Other," *Hastings Center Report* 18 (1988): 621.

[30]David Lamb, *Death, Brain Death and Ethics* (London: Croom Helm, 1985), 23.

[31]Roy Selby and Marilyn Selby, "Status of the Legal Definition of Death," *Neurosurgery* 5 (1979): 535.

[32]Paul Byrne and Richard Nilges, "The Brain Stem in Brain Death: A Critical Review," *Issues in Law and Medicine* 9 (1993): 3–21. Robert Veatch, "The Impending Collapse of the Whole-Brain Definition of Death," *Hastings Center Report* 23 (1993): 18–24.

[33]Margaret Lock, "Deadly Disputes: The Remaking of Death in Japan and North America," in Francis Zimmermann and Beatrice Pfleiderer, eds., *Medicine and Social Criticism* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, forthcoming).

[34]J. M. Prottas, *The Most Useful Gift: Altruism and the Public Policy of Organ Transplants* (San Francisco, Calif.: Jossey-Bass, 1994).

[35]M. Somerville, "Access to Organs for Transplantation: Overcoming Rejection," *Canadian Medical Association Journal* 132 (1985): 113–17.

[36]Prottas, *The Most Useful Gift: Altruism and the Public Policy of Organ Transplants*. J. R. Williams, "Human Organ Sales," *Annals of the Royal College of Physicians and Surgeons of Canada* 18 (1985): 401–404.

[37]L. B. Andrews, "My Body, My Property," *Hastings Center Report* 16 (1986): 28–38.

[38]Ivan Illich, *In the Mirror of the Past: Lectures and Addresses 1978–1990* (New York: Marion Boyars Publishers Ltd., 1992), 224.

[39]Robert Crawford, "Healthism and the Medicalization of Everyday Life," *International Journal of Health Services* 10 (1980): 365–88. Lock, *Encounters With Aging: Mythologies of Menopause in Japan and North America*.

[40]Willard Gaylin, "Harvesting the Dead," *Harpers Magazine* 52 (1974): 23–30.

[41]T. G. Peters, "Life or Death: The Issue of Payment in Cadaveric Organ Donation," *Journal of the American Medical Association* 265 (13 March 1991): 1302.

[42]T. Randall, "Too Few Human Organs for Transplantation, Too Many in Need. . .and the Gap Widens," *Journal of the American Medical Association* 265 (13 March 1991): 1223.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[43]Leon Kass, "Organs for Sale? Propriety, Property, and the Price of Progress," *The Public Interest,* April 1992, 84.

[44]Renée C. Fox and Judith P. Swazey, *Spare Parts: Organ Replacement in American Society* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1993), 57.

[45]J. F. Childress, "Ethical Criteria for Procuring and Distributing Organs for Transplantation," in J. F. Blumstein and F. A. Sloan, eds., *Organ Transplantation Policy: Issues and Prospects* (Durham, N.C.: Duke University Press, 1989), 87–113.

[46]Margareta Sanner, "A Comparison of Public Attitudes Toward Autopsy, Organ Donation and Anatomic Dissection," *JAMA* 271 (1994): 284–88.

[47]Arthur L. Caplan, "Professional Arrogance and Public Misunderstanding," *Hastings Center Report* 18 (1988): 34–37. J. M. Prottas and H. L. Batten, "Health Professionals and Hospital Administrators in Organ Procurement: Attitudes, Reservations, and their Resolutions," *American Journal of Public Health* 78 (1988): 642–45. S. J. Youngner, M. Allen, E. T. Bartlett et al., "Psychosocial and Ethical Implications of Organ Retrieval," *New England Journal of Medicine* 313 (1 August 1985): 321–24.

[48]Youngner, Allen, Bartlett et al., "Psychosocial and Ethical Implications of Organ Retrieval."

[49]S. J. Youngner, S. Landefeld, C. J. Coulton et al., "'Brain Death' and Organ Retrieval: A Cross-Sectional Survey of Knowledge and Concepts among Health-Care Professionals," *Journal of the American Medical Association* 261 (1989): 2205–210.

[50]J. L Bernat et al., "On the Definition and Criterion of Death," *Annals of Internal Medicine* 94 (1981): 391.

[51]Richard M. Zaner, "Introduction," in Richard Zaner, ed., *Death: Beyond Whole-Brain Criteria* (Dordrecht: Kluwer Academic Publishers, 1988), 7.

[52]Ibid., 5.

[53]Edward T. Bartlett and Stuart J. Youngner, "Human Death and the Destruction of the Neocortex," in Zaner, ed., *Death: Beyond Whole-Brain Criteria,* 199–216.

[54]Zaner, "Introduction," in Zaner, ed., *Death: Beyond Whole-Brain Criteria,* 13.

[55]Karen G. Gervais, *Redefining Death* (New Haven, Conn.: Yale University Press, 1987).

[56]David Lamb, *Organ Transplants and Ethics* (London: Routledge, 1990).

[57]Gervais, *Redefining Death*, 155.

[58]Lamb, *Death, Brain Death and Ethics.*

[59]Norman Fost, "Organs from Anencephalic Infants: An Idea Whose Time Has Not Yet Come," *Hastings Center Report* 18 (1988): 7.

[60]Youngner, Landefeld, Coulton et al., "'Brain Death' and Organ Retrieval," 2208.

[61]Ibid., 2209.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[62]Naoki Ikegami, "Health Technology Development in Japan," *International Journal of Technology Assessment in Health Care* 4 (1989): 239–54.

[63]Jiro Nudeshima, *Nôshi, zôkiishoku to nihon shakai* (Brain Death, Organ Transplants and Japanese Society) (Tokyo: Kôbundô, 1991).

[64]Masaharu Gôto, "Body and Soul: Organ Transplants," *Look Japan* 38 (1992): 32–33.

[65]"Cover-up suspected in first heart transplant," *Mainichi Shinbun,* 31 March 1991.

[66]"Organs removed from woman without consent," *Mainichi Daily News,* 24 December 1984.

[67]Eric A. Feldman, "Over My Dead Body: The Enigma and Economics of Death in Japan," in Naoko Ikegami and John C. Campbell, eds., *Containing Health Care Costs in Japan* (Ann Arbor, Mich.: University of Michigan Press, 1995).

[68]Kôseishô, "Kôseishô kenkyuhan ni yoru nôshi no hantei kijun" (Brain death determination criteria of the Ministry of Health and Welfare) (Tokyo: Kôseishô, 1985).

[69]Gen Ohi, Tomonori Hasegawa, Hiroyuki Kumano, Ichiro Kai, Nobuyuki Takenaga, Yoshio Taguchi, Hiroshi Saito, and Tsunamasa Ino, "Why are cadaveric renal transplants so hard to find in Japan? An analysis of economic and attitudinal aspects," *Health Policy* 6 (1986): 269–78.

[70]"Silence on Heart Transplant," *Asahi Shinbun,* 2 April 1991. Masaya Yamanchi, "Transplantation in Japan," *British Medical Journal* 301 (1990): 507.

[71]Taro Nakayama, *Nôshi to Zôki Ishoku* (Brain Death and Organ Transplants) (Tokyo: Saimaru Shippansha, 1989).

[72]Feldman, "Over My Dead Body: The Enigma and Economics of Death in Japan."

[73]Kantô Chiku Kôchôkai, "Rinji nôshi oyobi zôkiishoku chôsa kai," Tokyo, 1992. Yomiuri Shinbun, "Noshi ishoku yônin o saigo tôshin" (Final report approves of brain death, organ transplants), 23 January 1992.

[74]"'Nôshi Ishoku' michisuji nao futômei" (Brain Death and Transplants: The Way is Still Not Clear), *Nihon Keizai Shinbun,* 23 January 1992.

[75]"Giron fûjûbun to hihan no kenkai" (Insufficient debate is the critical opinion), *Asahi Shinbun,* 17 October 1991.

[76]"'Nôshi wa hito no shi,' tôshin" (Brain death is death, says report), *Asahi Shinbun,* 23 January 1992.

[77]See also Shumon Miura, "Attitudes Towards Death," *Japan Echo* 18 (1991): 67. "Zoki ishoku no saizensen" (The frontline in transplants), *Newsweek Nihon Han* (Japanese ed.), 25 February 1993.

[78]Takeshi Umehara and Michi Nakajima, "Soredeme nōshi wa shi dewa nai" (Still Brain Death is Not Death), *Bungeishunju* (March 1992): 302–12.

[79]Kôshichirô Hirosawa, "Tachiba kara mita nôshi to shinzô ishoku" (Brain death and heart transplants from the point of view of a circulatory system specialist),

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in Takeshi Umehara, ed., *Nôshi to zôki-ishoku* (Brain Death and Organ Transplants) (Tokyo: Asahi Shinbunsha, 1992).

[80]Toyô Watanabe, *Ima naze shi ka* (Why Death Now?) (Tokyo: Niki Shuppan, 1988). Takeshi Umehara, ed., "Hajime ni" (Introduction), in *'Nôshi' to zôki-ishoku* (Brain Death and Organ Transplants) (Tokyo: Asahi Shinbunsha, 1992), 1–7.

[81]Eiko Fukumoto, *Seibutsugaku jidai sei to shi* (Life and Death in the Era of Biological Sciences) (Tokyo: Gijitsu to Ninjen sha, 1989).

[82]Tetsuo Najita, "On Culture and Technology in Postmodern Japan," in M. Miyoshi and H. D. Harootunian, eds., *Postmodernism and Japan* (Durham, N.C.: Duke University Press, 1989), 3–20.

[83]Najita, "On Culture and Technology in Postmodern Japan," in Miyoshi and Harootunian, eds., *Postmodernism and Japan.*

[84]H. D. Harootunian, "Visible Discourse/Invisible Ideologies," in Miyoshi and Harootunian, eds., *Postmodernism and Japan,* 63–92.

[85]M. Nakajima, *Mienai shi: Nôshi to zôki ishoku* (Invisible Death: Brain Death and Organ Transplants) (Tokyo: Bungei Shunju, 1985). Nudeshima, *Nôshi, zôkiishoku to nihon shakai.*

[86]Masahiro Morioka, *Nôshi no Hito* (Brain Dead People) (Tokyo: Fukutake Shoten, 1991).

[87]E. Namihira, *Nôshi, Zôki Ishoku, gan Kokuchi* (Brain Death, Organ Transplants, Truth-Telling about Cancer) (Tokyo: Fukubu Shoten, 1988).

[88]Tôru Uozumi, "Nôshi mondai ni kansuru shiken to teian" (My opinion and proposals on the brain death issue), in Takeshi Umehara, ed., *Nôshi to zôki-ishoku* (Brain Death and Organ Transplants) (Tokyo: Asahi Shinbunsha, 1992). Koshichirō Hirosawa, "Tachiba kara mita nôshi to shinzô ishoku" (Brain death and heart transplants from the point of view of a circulatory system specialist), in Takeshi Umehara, ed., *Nôshi to zôki-ishoku* (Brain Death and Organ Transplants). Yoshihiko Komatsu, "Sentaki gijutsu to nôshironsô no shikaku" (The blind spot in advanced technology and brain death debates), *Gendai Shisô* 21 (1993): 198–212.

[89]Kumiko Maruyama, Hayashi Fumi, and Kamisaka Hisashi, "A Multivariate Analysis of Japanese Attitudes Toward Life and Death," *Behaviormetrika* 10 (1981): 37–48.

[90]Fleur Woss, "When Blossoms Fall: Japanese Attitudes Towards Death and the Other-World: Opinion Polls 1953–1987," in R. Goodman and K. Refsing, eds., *Ideology and Practice in Modern Japan* (London: Routledge, 1992), 72–100.

[91]*Shôwa 61 nenpan yoron chôsa nenkan* (Yearbook of Opinion Polls), "Kokoro no jidai. Zenkoku yoron chôsa" (The era of heart. Opinion poll by the Mainichi publishing house for the whole of Japan), in Naikaku Sôri Daijin Kanbô Kôhôshitsu, ed. (Tokyo: Mainichi Shinbunsha, 1987), 508–10.

[92]*Shôwa 54 nenpan yoron chôsa nenkan* (Yearbook of Opinion Polls), "Zenkoku kenmin ishiki chôsa" (Research on the consciousness of the Japanese prefectural populations), in Naikaku Sôri Daijin Kanbô Kôhôshitsu, ed. (Tokyo: NHK hôsô yoron chôsasho, 1979), 585–91.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[93]Monbushô, *Kaibôtai shûshû sû to kontai hiritsu* (Total Number of Bodies Accumulated for Autopsy and Percentage of Anatomical Gifts) (Tokyo: Monbushô Igaku Kyôikuka Shirabe, 1993).

[94]Hiroshi Takaji, "Nôshi to zôki ishoku ni kansuru daii no shinpojûmu" (The First Symposium in Connection with Brain Death and Organ Transplants), in Nagoya Bengoshi Kai, eds., *Nôshi to zôki ishoku miezarushî o mochimete* (Tokyo: Roppo shuppansha, 1991).

[95]Akira Omine, "Right and Wrong in the Brain-Death Debate," *Japan Echo* 18 (1991): 69.

[96]Ibid.

[97]Emiko Ohnuki-Tierney, "Brain Death and Organ Transplantation: Culture Bases of Medical Technology," *Current Anthropology* 35 (1994): 233–54.

[98]Tomio Tada, *Meneki no Imi ron* (The Meaning of Immunity) (Tokyo: Seidosha, 1993).

[99]William LaFleur, *Liquid Life: Abortion and Buddhism in Japan* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1992).

[100]Carl Becker, *Breaking the Circle: Death and the Afterlife in Buddhism* (Carbondale, Ill.: Southern Illinois University Press, 1993).

[101]"Zoki ishoku no saizensen" (The frontline in transplants), *Newsweek Nihon Han* (Japanese ed.), 25 February 1993.

[102]Ibid.

[103]Kass, "Organs for Sale? Propriety, Property, and the Price of Progress."

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Allan Young

Suffering and the Origins of Traumatic Memory

THE TERM "SUFFERING" HAS TWO BROAD MEANINGS as it is used in everyday discourse. First, the term identifies a disvalued state to which certain organisms are susceptible because of their biological makeup: suffering is associated with somatic pain and the moments of consciousness that accompany or anticipate this pain. To experience such suffering, an organism requires only a nervous system evolved to the point where we can say that it is conscious of its pain. The second kind of suffering includes states that are variously described as psychological, existential, or spiritual and that are identified by such words as "despairing" and "desolated." This second kind of suffering has a social or moral dimension, in the sense that it is understood locally, by identifiable groups and communities, in the context of ideas about redemption, merit, responsibility, justice, innocence, expiation, etc. Buddhists, Christians, and devotees of the Zar cult all experience suffering in its second meaning, but the quality of their suffering (in the sensibilities of their respective communities) is not the same.

The two kinds of suffering overlap rather than coincide. The first is based on a universal biology. (For the moment, set aside the fact that the boundary between suffering and nonsuffering in the first sense is culturally determined.) Therefore, it is pan-human and includes neurologically-evolved nonhuman species. The second kind of suffering is based on social codes (which include moral and religious codes), and these codes may reject the idea

Allan Young is Professor of Anthropology in the Departments of Social Studies of Medicine, Anthropology, and Psychiatry at McGill University, Canada.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that all human beings are eligible to suffer in this sense, even when they experience equal degrees of suffering in the first sense. Up until and into the nineteenth century, the idea of universal suffering, the eligibility of all people to suffer psychologically, existentially, or spiritually, was justified mainly on philosophical or theological grounds. This is not the case today (at least in the West): psychobiology and psychiatry have provided us with a new rhetoric of suffering, grounded in the authority of science and predicated on the mechanism called psychogenic trauma. (This rhetoric, I should add, complements, and does not challenge, the traditional religious and philosophic conceptions of universal suffering.)

The idea of psychogenic trauma is today widely understood among all classes and social groups. The underlying idea is an extension of much older conceptions, rooted in folk psychology, concerning the power of experiences to cause intense emotions that, in turn, cause pain and disease. Why "trauma" and "traumatic"? Why these particular words and not some others? The earliest entry for "traumatic" in the *Oxford English Dictionary* was in 1656: "belonging to wounds or the cure of wounds," a definition that mirrors the term's Greek root. This was the single use of the word until the nineteenth century, when it was first extended to include mental trauma. So the answer to my question, "Why 'trauma'?," might seem only too obvious. Trauma, originally a term for physical wounds causing pain and suffering, was extended, *via analogy,* to include cognitive-emotional states that cause psychological and existential pain and suffering. This commonsense view is historically incorrect, however: the two kinds of trauma, organic and psychological/existential, are connected through genealogy, not analogy.

It was the universality of the body and of physical pain, first mapped in surgical theaters and in experiments on animals in physiology laboratories, that provided science and medicine with its authority to talk about traumatic suffering of the mind. The extension of trauma from body to mind was not direct, though; it was mediated through either the discovery or the invention of a heretofore unidentified variety of memory—the *traumatic memory.* The traumatic memory, as we know it today, emerged in the closing decades of the nineteenth century, with the intersection of two chains of events. One chain begins with investigations of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

somnambulism in the late eighteenth century, leads through Ribot's speculations on hypermnesia and psychogenic amnesia, on to the clinical studies of Charcot, Janet, and Freud, and ends with the discovery of the "pathogenic secret," an act of self-deception in which a person hides a memory of a disturbing event from herself. Although out of consciousness, the memory continues to affect her behavior and is a source of suffering.[1] At about the same time, a second chain of events produces a related phenomenon, a traumatic memory rooted in anatomy and physiology. The two lines intersect at various points, beginning with Charcot's investigation of traumatic hysteria, and, more recently, in theories concerning the origins and chronicity of posttraumatic stress disorder. This essay provides a brief and necessarily incomplete account of only half of this story, namely the history of the embodied traumatic memory.[2]

NERVOUS SHOCK AND SURGICAL SHOCK

Historical accounts of the traumatic event routinely trace to the publication of *On Railway and Other Injuries of the Nervous System*, by John Erichsen, a professor of surgery.[3] Erichsen, like other British physicians responsible for diagnosing and assessing injuries and symptoms attributed to railway accidents, divided these patients into three categories: *1)* cases originating in powerful blows or "shocks" that damage neural tissue in ways that are visible to postmortem examination; *2)* cases resulting from shocks that originate in trivial blows or from shaking and jarring and that produce generally invisible damage; and *3)* cases in which people fabricate symptoms to collect compensation. In all three cases, the symptoms are outwardly the same.[4]

Like other early writers on traumatic injuries, Erichsen was also an authority on surgery, and his description of the symptoms of nervous shock parallels his account of surgical shock:

> [The effects of shock] consist in a disturbance of the functions of the circulatory, respiratory, and nervous systems, the harmony of action of the great organs being disarranged. On the receipt of a severe injury the sufferer becomes cold, faint, and trembling; the pulse is small and fluttering; there is a great mental depression and disquietude; the disturbed state of mind revealing itself in the counte-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> nance, and in the incoherence of speech and thought; the surface becomes covered by a cold sweat; there is nausea, perhaps vomiting, and relaxation of the sphincters. . . .In extreme cases, the depression of power characterizing shock may be so great as to terminate in death.[5]

Erichsen's descriptions of nervous shock and surgical shock are pathognomonic: they identify sets of characteristic symptoms but indicate no causal mechanisms. Erichsen does not specify how the organ systems—nervous, circulatory, and respiratory—are connected in cases of shock. However, knowledgeable physicians of the period would have been able to supply the missing details. What these ideas were likely to have been can be discerned from a popular text on the topic of trauma, Edwin Morris's *A Practical Treatise on Shock After Surgical Operations and Injuries*.[6] Like Erichsen, Morris was a surgeon with a special interest in railway accidents. He defines shock as an effect "produced by violent injuries from any cause, or from violent emotions. . . ." The idea that the effect of violence inflicted on one part of the body might then be transmitted to other parts and to internal organs presupposes the existence of an anatomical structure that connects all of these parts. Further, the structure must be able to perform its function without leaving behind any obvious postmortem evidence, since shock can occur in the absence of lesions or hemorrhages. The only structure capable of all this is "the nervous system, acting directly upon the great nervous centre, the brain. . . ." Once nervous influences on the heart's action are suspended, the flow of blood to the brain, nervous system, and respiratory organs is interrupted, and a negative feedback is created, producing an effect that accompanies surgical shock and, in the form of syncope, many cases of nervous shock: "the brain could not perform its normal part without the blood any more than the heart could beat without the brain."[7]

A satisfactory account of trauma also had to explain the part that *fear* seemed to play in cases of both surgical shock and nervous shock. Morris mentions fearful patients who died before their surgery, and links their deaths to the power of their emotion. But how does an emotion, acting alone, produce effects that duplicate the consequences of a serious physical trauma? The puzzle is solved once one accepts that fear is simply an assault, comparable

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in its action to a physical blow or injury: "shock through the medium of the brain is such as to suspend the faculties of sense and volition, and to act directly upon the heart as a powerful sedative, producing a prostration of the nervous system. . . ."[8]

This is the background knowledge that Erichsen's readers would have brought to his account. Unlike Morris and other authorities, Erichsen implied that, in railway injuries, traumatic shock occurs exclusively through concussion to the spine. While the initial effects of the concussion are invisible, detectable organic changes gradually develop. These changes may take months and are characterized by the "softening and disorganization" of the cord, ruptures in its membranes, and inflammations—effects similar to the changes found in chronic meningitis and myelitis.[9]

Erichsen describes the typical "uninjured" patient as being initially calm and asymptomatic. The effects of his injury begin once he gets home. "A revulsion of feeling takes place. He bursts into tears, becomes unusually talkative, and is excited. He cannot sleep, or if he does, he wakes up suddenly with a vague sense of alarm. The next day he complains of feeling shaken or bruised all over. . . ." A week later he cannot exert himself or resume business. As the (hypothesized) spinal lesions develop, he grows pallid, careworn, and anxious; his memory suffers and his thoughts become confused; he is fretful and irritable; his head throbs and he is giddy; he suffers from double vision and photophobia; his hearing is either hypersensitive or dulled, and he is troubled by a loud and incessant noise; his posture alters and his gait becomes unsteady; the strength of his limbs diminishes, sometimes to the point of paralysis; he experiences a change or loss of sensation, such as numbness or tingling; his senses of taste and smell are likewise affected; his pulse is feeble, unnaturally slow in the earlier stages of his disorder and unnaturally fast in the later stages; he suffers from local pain and tenderness in the area of the spine.[10]

Erichsen's account mentions, in passing, the victim's mental state during railway collisions:

> [I]n no ordinary accident can the shock be so great as in those that occur on Railways. The rapidity of the movement, the momentum of the person injured, the suddenness of its arrest, the helplessness of the sufferers, and that natural perturbation of mind that must dis-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> turb the bravest, are all circumstances that of necessity increase the severity of the resulting injury to the nervous system. . . .[11]

Once more, Erichsen fails to identify the mechanisms—psychological and physiological—through which states of helplessness and perturbation (fear, fright, confusion) might intensify the effects of physical injuries.

The most sustained criticism of Erichsen came from Herbert Page, a fellow of the Royal College of Surgeons and consulting physician for the London and Western Railway Company. In 1883, Page had published a monograph on railway accidents that summarized 234 case histories, many involving injuries "without apparent mechanical lesion." In his book, he criticizes Erichsen for attempting to explain the entire span of traumatic railway cases by a single mechanism—spinal concussion resulting in lesions—and also for underplaying or misunderstanding the role of mental factors, especially fear and the desire for compensation, in the onset of symptoms. In 1846, Parliament had passed the Campbell Act, for compensating families of persons killed in accidents resulting from the negligence of a second party. In 1864, an amendment to the Act extended its provisions to include victims of railway accidents. In the following year, juries awarded over £300,000 to people injured on the railways.[12] According to Page, the British public was fully aware of the provisions of the Campbell Act, and people involved in railway accidents were now unable to think of injuries in isolation from their possible monetary significance. He advises physicians to take care when diagnosing people with trivial or invisible injuries: to consider not only the possibility of conscious fraud, but also the possibility that the patient's state of mind might be affected in "wholly unconscious ways" by a desire for compensation.

Page's account of the physiology of shock is based on a surgical monograph by Edward Furneaux Jordan.[13] Like Morris, Furneaux Jordan argued that fear plays a determinative role in certain cases of shock, and this explains why surgical shock "is not always proportionate in its intensity to the severity of the wound."[14] According to Page, the "medical literature abounds in cases where the gravest disturbances of function, and even death. . .have been produced by fright and fright alone," and the same mental element

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

explains why people who suffer broken and mangled limbs in railway accidents arrive at the hospital in a state of shock characteristically more severe than that suffered by people with similar injuries from other causes.[15]

A typical case of nervous shock involves "S. W.," a man who suffered a broken nose and bruises (relatively minor injuries) in "a very severe and destructive collision."

> [S. W.] lay for several days after the accident in a state of great nervous depression, with feeble and rapid pulse, and inability to eat or sleep. He suffered at the same time much distress from the fact that a friend sitting beside him in the carriage had been killed; and this seemed to prey constantly upon his mind. The bodily injuries progressed rapidly towards recovery. . . .[But even after two months] his mental condition showed extreme emotional disturbance. He complained that he had suffered continuously from depression of spirits, as if some great trouble were impending.[16]

At this point, S. W. suffered from shortness of breath, his pulse was weak, and he was too shaken and feeble to manage more than a bit of reading. His voice was weak and often inaudible, he cried easily, slept poorly, and was troubled by distressing dreams. His claims for compensation were settled two years later, but his medical problems continued. He remained depressed, tired easily, slept poorly, and suffered palpitations four years after the accident.[17]

A smaller number of Page's cases consist of "neuromimesis," instances of "purely functional disorders" imitating neurological disease.[18] A typical case concerns "R. C.," an army officer who had been pitched back and forth in his carriage during a nighttime collision. R. C. did not recall being injured,

> [but] the next morning he felt very ill and vomited, and he soon began to suffer from pain across the loins, queer sensations all over the body, nausea, giddiness, and want of sleep. On. . .the twelfth day after the accident he fell suddenly and struck his nose against the corner of a table. . . .His own description was that the "fit came on about three in the afternoon, I fell down and screamed, and then began to cry and sob violently. During it I was unconscious, although I knew that people were around me. . . ." He called this fit an "hysterical attack," and the doctor who saw him immediately afterwards, and who found him more or less unconscious, said that this

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

> was its nature. Six weeks after the accident he complained of pain in the back, loss of memory, inability to apply himself, occasional giddiness, nausea, and want of sleep.[19]

According to Page, R. C.'s hysterical seizures originated in syncope, a temporary loss of consciousness that is caused when the heart fails to provide the brain with blood. Page traced R. C.'s symptoms (and, one supposes, S. W.'s) to "morbid changes of the nerve centres which underlie them." These changes were unlike those proposed by Erichsen, since they were not confined to the spinal cord nor could they be compared with the effects of meningitis. Indeed, Page disavowed any analogy:

> That there are changes is almost certain; what those changes are we do not know. One thing, however, may be said with some degree of confidence, that they differ very materially from the gross pathological changes in structure which we are accustomed to see upon the post-mortem table, or. . .[through] the microscope.[20]

THE PHYLOGENETIC MEMORY

Nervous shock, like surgical shock, travels along pathoanatomical pathways, but opinions differ as to whether these pathways are parallel or congruent. At the end of the nineteenth century, George W. Crile, an American surgeon-physiologist, proposed to connect fear to physical injury, and nervous shock to surgical shock, by introducing a new element into the equation, namely *pain*. Crile writes that pain announces itself in two ways: There is dumb pain, the intrinsically unpleasant experience that sensate organisms instinctively strive to avoid. But pain can also be a supremely important kind of bodily knowledge, a signal that locates injury and that is a portent of mortality. Nonhuman organisms do not fear injury per se, rather they must *learn* to fear the events that cause injury. And what they learn to fear is the pain that accompanies injury. It is precisely because pain is unpleasant that it is also a gift. Without the knowledge of pain, the organism and its species would be free to pursue their own destruction.[21]

The organism fears pain and it fears the things that will bring it pain. Thus, fear is constituted from two things: a bodily state and a memory. These memories are acquired ontogenetically through

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the organism's own experience with pain, and they are acquired phylogenetically through inherited fears. This conclusion, that fear is the memory of pain, did not originate with Crile. Charles Darwin made a similar suggestion in *The Expression of Emotions in Man and Animals*,[22] and the source of Darwin's idea is Herbert Spencer, whose account of fear is given in *The Principles of Psychology*.[23]

Spencer is the missing link in the genealogy of traumatic memory. What are the origins of fear? How do organisms know what things they must fear? The answers seem obvious: fear is an instinct and the organism's ability to recognize elemental dangers is likewise instinctive. For Spencer, however, that answer begs the question, "What is 'instinct' and what are *its* origins?" For many of Spencer's contemporaries, that question was simply unnecessary, since instinct was assumed to be the starting point for explaining behavior and not the object of explanations.

Spencer had started with a localizationist view of the brain. Like Gall and other phrenologists, he divided the cortex into regions, each the site of a mental faculty, among which fear could be included.[24] In *The Principles of Psychology,* he shifted to an associationist position: percepts and simple concepts agglutinate into complex ideas and cognitive-affective structures when they are linked through resemblance (analogy), contiguity (in time and space), causality, and sensation (pain and pleasure). Like David Hume, Spencer rejected the innateness of human knowledge and any suggestion that the repository of knowledge, the "self," is more than a fiction based on personal memories. But there is also an important difference between Spencer and Hume. Hume's position is that the self is a fiction constructed on personal memories: "Had we no memory, we never should have any notion of causation, nor consequently of that chain of causes and effects, which constitute our self or person."[25] This proposition is not good enough for Spencer because it fails to explain two truths: First, there is knowledge that is universal but cannot be traced to an individual's own experiences or instruction. The infant's "instinctive" fear of snakes is an instance of such knowledge. Second, "If, at birth, there exists nothing but a passive receptivity of impressions, why is not a horse as educable as a Man? Should it be said that language makes the difference, then why do not the cat and

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

the dog, reared in the same household, arrive at equal degrees and kinds of intelligence?"[26]

Spencer answers his questions by introducing an evolutionary premise, in the guise of phylogenetic memory:

> [T]here are established in the structure of the nervous system absolute internal relations—relations that are potentially present before birth in the shape of definite nervous connexions; that are antecedent to, and independent of, individual experiences; and that are automatically disclosed along with the first cognitions. . . .But these pre-determined internal relations, though independent of the experiences of the individual, are not independent of experiences in general: they have been determined by the experiences of preceding organisms.[27]

Each phylogenetic memory begins as an individual experience. To say that an experience is remembered means that it has left a neurological trace. These traces (which include memorized action patterns) tend to fade over time unless they are periodically recalled and/or reenacted, in which case a trace evolves into a permanent neural pathway. Pathways grow progressively deeper as the organically registered experiences of multiple generations are accumulated. In time, such pathways permit impulses to move unimpeded, so that no cognitive effort is required to move from initial perception to completed response. On reaching this point, a phylogenetic memory is equivalent to what is called an instinct.[28]

One might argue that a phylogenetic memory is not really a memory, since it does not enter consciousness. However, the same objection might be raised concerning pathogenic secrets described by Ribot, Charcot, Janet, Breuer, Freud, and others (fixed ideas, repressed memories, and so on). In fact, the phylogenetic memory *does* enter consciousness: not through cognitive effort, it is true, but at the moment of reenactment. What is special about this conscious memory is that, at the moment of remembrance and reenactment, it collapses time, fusing the ancestral past and the experienced present.

Spencer's phylogenetic memory is cognate with Haeckel's notion of epigenesis, the idea that a species's evolutionary history is recapitulated in the embryological development of its individual members. Spencer's Lamarckian theory was subsequently elabo-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

rated upon by the British neurologist John Hughlings Jackson, who pictured the nervous system as an accretion of layers. Consciousness and active memories lie at the topmost level; more recently acquired ancestral memories, still requiring cognitive effort, make up the next layers; and the lower levels consist of the most ancient and "instinctive" memories.[29] The rediscovery of Mendel's genetic experiments at the turn of the century signaled the end of Lamarckian theories and the ascendance of Darwinian mechanisms: chance, mutation, and natural selection. The decline of use-inheritance was not immediate: Pavlov entertained the possibility of hereditary transmission of conditioned reflexes into the 1920s;[30] German and French researchers kept the door open to Lamarckianism for two more decades; and Freud continued to base the sexual etiology of the psychoneuroses on a phylogenetic (Oedipal) memory of the sort described by Spencer.[31]

However, there is no necessary link between phylogenetic memory and Lamarckian premises, and one could argue that simple kinds of phylogenetic memory might be inherited just as easily through Darwinian mechanisms. This is how Crile and his contemporary Walter B. Cannon think of fear. Fear looks to the past (memory of pain) and likewise to the future, to actions (fight or flight) that allow the organism to avoid pain, injury, and death. Here again, the key idea—that fear and its opposite, anger, are dual expressions of one physiological phenomenon—originates with Spencer.[32] What makes Cannon's account of fear different from Spencer's is that it moves elements of phylogenetic memory out of the brain and into the sympathetic nervous system and its functional extension, the adrenal glands.

Cannon represents fear and anger as phases of physiological mobilization within an internal environment (the organism) that is perpetually striving to adjust itself, through the regulative actions of the sympathetic nervous system and the endocrines, to changes and challenges originating in the external environment.[33] It would seem that Cannon, like Spencer and unlike Erichsen and Page, is depathologizing fear, shifting its traumatic associations to the field of evolutionary biology, and redefining its neurophysiology as a transient state of adaptive arousal. One has to follow him only one step further to see that this is not the whole story. A dramatic account of how a survival mechanism, physiological mobilization

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

triggered by fear and anger, can be transformed into its opposite, a pathogenic process, is found in Cannon's article titled "'Voodoo' Death," published at the end of his career. According to Cannon, episodes of successful sorcery (voodoo death) go through a sequence: a curse is laid in public, the victim is isolated by his community, and then the community converges on the wretched man "in order to subject him to the fateful rite of mourning." Over the course of these events, the victim is filled with "powerless misery." Spurred by fear and anger, he is physically primed to either escape or attack the source of danger, but is unable to follow either course. "If these powerful emotions prevail, and the bodily forces are fully mobilized for action, and if this state of extreme perturbation continues in uncontrolled possession of the organism for a considerable period, without the occurrence of action, dire results [including death] may ensue."[34]

Cannon's ideas about the pathophysiology of voodoo death are based on research conducted on decorticated cats earlier in his career. In the experiments, Cannon severed connections between the cerebral cortex and the remainder of the nervous system, producing a state of excessive activity of the sympathetic-adrenal system that was allowed to continue unabated. Cannon called this state "sham rage" and claimed that it replicates the states of intense fear and anger that occur naturally in whole animals. After several hours of sham rage, the decorticated cat's blood pressure gradually dropped, to the point where its heart stopped beating. This process is Cannon's solution to the mystery of voodoo death and it likewise explains the nervous shock syndrome described by Erichsen and Page. Victims "die from a true state of shock, in the surgical sense—a shock induced by prolonged and intense emotion." Although the hocus-pocus of voodoo death is foreign to civilized societies, similar processes occur there too. Cannon mentions cases of World War I soldiers who fell into shock following "wounds. . .so trivial that they could not be reasonably regarded as the cause of the shock state."[35]

Cannon's idea of voodoo death is rooted in a universal biology, but it is a remarkably circumscribed phenomenon, found mainly among primitive peoples, "bewildered strangers in a hostile world. Instead of knowledge they have a fertile and unrestricted imagination, which fills their environment with all manner of evil spirits

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

capable of affecting their lives disastrously."[36] Further, in his account, fear is inescapable and its effects unrelenting. But what happens when exposure to traumatic shock is intermittent? Cannon (and Crile) calls this phenomenon "summation"—a process during which the physical effects of multiple exposures accumulate and eventually lead to the progressive destabilization associated with voodoo death. Animal experiments conducted by Pavlov at about the same time pointed to a radically different possibility: during periods between exposures, the organism returned to homeostasis, but a state different from the *status quo ante*. In other words, recurrent trauma produces a transformation rather than a summation.

This is a critical moment in the genealogy of the traumatic memory. In Cannon's experiments, a distance had been preserved between the victim and the source of its pain and fear. The Pavlovians collapsed this space and interiorized the source of pain. In a classic conditioning experiment, an animal is exposed to a source of inescapable pain, such as electric shock. The animal is repeatedly reexposed to the shock, and each time it produces pain and physiological arousal. At the same time, the animal is aware of stimuli in its immediate environment that co-occur with the source of its pain but are incidental to it. The victim learns to associate these phenomena with the shock and they acquire a mnemonic power: whenever it encounters them, it is forced to remember and relive its distress and arousal. In time, the scope of the conditioned response is extended, through association, to objects and events located outside the original place of pain. Escape is now impossible: each reexposure revives the victim's pathogenic memory and the potency of the conditioned stimuli.

A properly conditioned victim has several ways of responding to its pathogenic memory. Pavlovians focused on two reactions: some victims develop routines (phobias) allowing them to avoid noxious stimuli, and others simply give up (learned helplessness). There is, however, a third possible reaction, let us call it *neo*-Pavlovian, since it emerges later, in connection with posttraumatic stress disorder. The basic idea is that victims of traumatic memory seek out circumstances that replicate their etiological events. This scenario is based on anecdotal and experimental evidence suggesting that endorphins (endogenous opioids) are released into a victim's

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

bloodstream during moments of traumatic shock. This would be an adaptive response during fight-or-flight emergencies, since endorphins would produce a state in which the individual is undistracted and undeterred by pain. In cases of posttraumatic stress disorder, endorphins would produce a tranquilizing effect by reducing the feelings of anxiety, depression, and inadequacy that often accompany this syndrome. Over time, such people would become *addicted* both to their endorphins and to the memories that release these chemicals. When intervals between exposures grow too long, people can be expected to experience the symptoms of opiate withdrawal (which are, coincidentally, also criterial features of the posttraumatic stress disorder diagnostic classification): anxiety, irritability, explosive outbursts, insomnia, emotional lability, hyperalterness. These symptoms would exacerbate the ongoing distress intrinsic to this disorder and pain would build to the point where the individual is induced to self-dose with his endorphins. This would be accomplished by reexposing himself to situations that mimic his original traumatogenic event.[37]

FINIS

Spencer, Crile, and Cannon scripted an evolutionary narrative in which the inability to feel pain is represented as a dangerous kind of ignorance. The body was said to remember its pain, and "fear" was the name given to this memory. Fear, like pain, was transmuted into an evolutionary gift, enabling the organism to anticipate threats and to avoid its destruction. The account is positive and reassuring, signaling the beneficent wisdom of a higher pragmatism. Pain and fear have been normalized, turned into memories with which the individual can now make his way in the world. With the neo-Pavlovians, the meaning of memory is turned inside out, and transformed into a recognizably modern phenomenon: an affliction through which pain and fear colonize and degrade the sufferer's life-world.

ENDNOTES

[1]Henri F. Ellenberger, "The Pathogenic Secret and its Therapeutics," in Mark Micale, ed., *Beyond the Unconscious: Essays of Henri F. Ellenberger in the History of Psychiatry* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1993), 341–59.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[2]Allan Young, *The Harmony of Illusions: Inventing Post-Traumatic Stress Disorder* (Princeton, N.J.: Princeton University Press, 1995).

[3]John E. Erichsen, *On Railway and Other Injuries of the Nervous System* (London: Walton and Maberly, 1866).

[4]Ibid., 10, 113–14.

[5]John E. Erichsen, *The Science and Art of Surgery*, 6th ed. (London: Longmans, Green, 1872), 106.

[6]Edwin Morris, *A Practical Treatise on Shock after Surgical Operations and Injuries, with Special Reference to Shock Caused by Railway Accidents* (London: Robert Hardwicke, 1867).

[7]Ibid., 9–10, 11, 17, 19.

[8]Ibid., 20–21.

[9]Erichsen, *On Railway and Other Injuries of the Nervous System*, 95, 112–14.

[10]Ibid., 95–110.

[11]Ibid., 9.

[12]Morris, *A Practical Treatise on Shock after Surgical Operations and Injuries, with Special Reference to Shock Caused by Railway Accidents*, 55.

[13]Edward Furneaux Jordan, *Surgical Inquiries; Including the Hastings Essay on Shock, the Treatment of Surgical Inflammations, and Clinical Lectures* (London: J. and A. Churchill, 1880).

[14]Ibid., 1–2, 10, 13.

[15]Herbert W. Page, *Injuries of the Spine and Spinal Cord without Apparent Mechanical Lesion, and Nervous Shock, in their Surgical and Medico-Legal Aspects* (London: J. and A. Churchill, 1883), 117.

[16]Ibid., 151–52.

[17]Ibid., 151–52.

[18]Ibid., 198–99.

[19]Ibid., 216–17.

[20]Ibid., 198–99.

[21]George W. Crile, *An Experimental Research into Surgical Shock* (Philadelphia, Pa.: Lippincott, 1899); George W. Crile, "Phylogenetic Association in Relation to Certain Medical Problems," *Boston Medical and Surgical Journal* 163 (1910): 893–904; and George W. Crile, *The Origin and Nature of the Emotions* (Philadelphia, Pa.: W. B. Saunders, 1915).

[22]Charles Darwin, *The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals* (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1965).

[23]Herbert Spencer, *The Principles of Psychology* (London: Longman, Brown, Green, and Longmans, 1855), 594–600.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[24]Edwin Clarke and L. S. Jacyna, *Nineteenth-Century Origins of Neuroscientific Concepts* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1987), 220–34, 238–44; Robert M. Young, *Mind, Brain and Adaptation in the Nineteenth Century* (New York: Oxford University Press, 1990), 173, 180–81.

[25]David Hume, *A Treatise of Human Nature,* vol. 1 (Darmstadt: Scientia Verlag Aalen, 1964), 542.

[26]Herbert Spencer, *The Principles of Psychology,* 2nd ed. (London: Longman, Brown, Green, and Longmans, 1880), 468.

[27]Ibid., 470.

[28]Ibid., 450–51.

[29]Roger Smith, *Inhibition: History and Meaning in the Sciences of Mind and Brain* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1992), 76, 78–79; Young, *Mind, Brain and Adaptation in the Nineteenth Century,* 178, 182–83, 186–87.

[30]Ivan P. Pavlov, *Conditioned Reflexes: An Account of the Physiological Activity of the Cerebral Cortex* (London: Oxford University Press, 1927), 285.

[31]Patricia Kitcher, *Freud's Dream: A Complete Interdisciplinary Theory of Mind* (Cambridge, Mass.: MIT Press, 1992), 67–74, 104–109, 174–90; Frank Sulloway, *Freud, Biologist of the Mind* (New York: Basic Books, 1983), chap. 4.

[32]Spencer, *The Principles of Psychology,* 596. For similar observations, see Darwin, *The Expression of the Emotions in Man and Animals,* 74, 77.

[33]Walter B. Cannon, "The Interrelations of Emotions as Suggested by Recent Physiological Researchers," *American Journal of Psychiatry* 25 (1914): 181–256; Walter B. Cannon, *Bodily Changes in Pain, Hunger, Fear and Rage* (Boston, Mass.: Charles T. Branford, 1929), chaps. 12, 14.

[34]Walter B. Cannon, "'Voodoo' Death," *American Anthropologist* 44 (1942): 176.

[35]Ibid., 179.

[36]Ibid., 175.

[37]B. A. van der Kolk, M. Greenberg, H. Boyd, and J. Krystal, "Inescapable Shock, Neurotransmitters, and Addiction to Trauma: Toward a Psychobiology of Posttraumatic Stress," *Biological Psychiatry* 20 (1985): 314–25; Roger K. Pitman, B. A. van der Kolk, S. P. Orr, and M. S. Greenberg, "Naloxone-Reversible Analgesic Response to Combat-Related Stimuli in Posttraumatic Stress Disorder," *Archives of General Psychiatry* 47 (1990): 541–44.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Paul Farmer

On Suffering and Structural Violence: A View from Below

EVERYONE KNOWS THAT SUFFERING EXISTS. The question is how to define it. Given that each person's pain has a degree of reality for him or her that the pain of others can surely never approach, is widespread agreement on the subject possible? Almost all of us would agree that premature and painful illness, torture, and rape constitute extreme suffering. Most would also agree that insidious assaults on dignity, such as institutionalized racism and sexism, also cause great and unjust injury.

Given our consensus on some of the more conspicuous forms of suffering, a number of corollary questions come to the fore. Can we identify those most at risk of great suffering? Among those whose suffering is not mortal, is it possible to identify those most likely to sustain permanent and disabling damage? Are certain "event" assaults, such as torture or rape, more likely to lead to late sequelae than are sustained and insidious suffering, such as the pain born of deep poverty or of racism? Under this latter rubric, are certain forms of discrimination demonstrably more noxious than others?

Anthropologists who take these as research questions study both individual experience and the larger social matrix in which it is embedded in order to see how various large-scale social forces come to be translated into personal distress and disease. By what mechanisms do social forces ranging from poverty to racism be-

Paul Farmer, an Assistant Professor in the Department of Social Medicine at Harvard Medical School, practices medicine at the Brigham and Women's Hospital in Boston and at the Clinique Bon Sauveur in rural Haiti.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

come *embodied* as individual experience? This has been the focus of most of my own research in Haiti, where political and economic forces have structured risk for AIDS, tuberculosis, and, indeed, most other infectious and parasitic diseases. Social forces at work there have also structured risk for most forms of extreme suffering, from hunger to torture and rape.

Working in contemporary Haiti, where in recent years political violence has been added to the worst poverty in the hemisphere, one learns a great deal about suffering. In fact, the country has long constituted a sort of living laboratory for the study of affliction, no matter how it is defined. "Life for the Haitian peasant of today," observed anthropologist Jean Weise some twenty-five years ago, "is abject misery and a rank familiarity with death."[1] The situation has since worsened. When in 1991 international health and population experts devised a "human suffering index" by examining measures of human welfare ranging from life expectancy to political freedom, 27 of 141 countries were characterized by "extreme human suffering." Only one of them, Haiti, was located in the Western hemisphere. In only three countries in the world was suffering judged to be more extreme than that endured in Haiti; each of these three countries is currently in the midst of an internationally recognized civil war.

Suffering is certainly a recurrent and expected condition in Haiti's Central Plateau, where everyday life has felt like war. "You get up in the morning," observed one young widow with four children, "and it's the fight for food and wood and water." If initially struck by the austere beauty of the region's steep mountains and clement weather, long-term visitors come to see the Central Plateau in much the same manner as its inhabitants: a chalky and arid land hostile to the best efforts of the peasant farmers who live here. Landlessness is widespread and so, consequently, is hunger. All the standard measures reveal how tenuous the peasantry's hold on survival is. Life expectancy at birth is less than fifty years, in large part because as many as two of every ten infants die before their first birthday. Tuberculosis is the leading cause of death among adults; among children, diarrheal disease, measles, and tetanus ravage the undernourished.

But the experience of suffering, it is often noted, is not effectively conveyed by statistics or graphs. The "texture" of dire

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

affliction is perhaps best felt in the gritty details of biography, and so I introduce the stories of Acéphie Joseph and Chouchou Louis.[2] The stories of Acéphie and Chouchou are anything but "anecdotal." For the epidemiologist as well as the political analyst, they suffered and died in exemplary fashion. Millions of people living in similar circumstances can expect to meet similar fates. What these victims, past and present, share are not personal or psychological attributes—they do not share culture, language, or race. Rather, what they share is the experience of occupying the bottom rung of the social ladder in inegalitarian societies.[3]

Acéphie Joseph's and Chouchou Louis's stories illustrate some of the mechanisms through which large-scale social forces crystallize into the sharp, hard surfaces of individual suffering. Such suffering is structured by historically given (and often economically driven) processes and forces that conspire—whether through routine, ritual, or, as is more commonly the case, these hard surfaces—to constrain agency.[4] For many, including most of my patients and informants, life choices are structured by racism, sexism, political violence, *and* grinding poverty.

ACÉPHIE'S STORY

> *For the wound of the daughter of my people is my heart wounded,*
> *I mourn, and dismay has taken hold of me.*
> *Is there no balm in Gilead? Is there no physician there?*
> *Why then has the health of the daughter of my people not been restored?*
> *O that my head were waters, and my eyes a fountain of tears, that I might weep day and night for the slain of the daughter of my people!*
>
> —*Jeremiah 8:22–9.1*

Kay, a community of fewer than fifteen hundred people, stretches along an unpaved road that cuts north and east into Haiti's Central Plateau. Striking out from Port-au-Prince, the capital, it can take several hours to reach Kay. The journey gives one an impression of isolation, insularity. The impression is misleading, as the village owes its existence to a project conceived in the Haitian capital and drafted in Washington, D.C.: Kay is a settlement of

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

refugees, substantially composed of peasant farmers displaced more than thirty years ago by Haiti's largest dam.

Before 1956, the village of Kay was situated in a fertile valley, and through it ran the Rivière Artibonite. For generations, thousands of families had farmed the broad and gently sloping banks of the river, selling rice, bananas, millet, corn, and sugarcane in regional markets. Harvests were, by all reports, bountiful; life there is now recalled as idyllic. When the valley was flooded with the building of the dam, the majority of the local population was forced up into the stony hills on either side of the new reservoir. By all the standard measures, the "water refugees" became exceedingly poor; the older people often blame their poverty on the massive buttress dam a few miles away, and bitterly note that it brought them neither electricity nor water.

In 1983, when I began working in the Central Plateau, AIDS, although already afflicting an increasing number of city dwellers, was unknown in most areas as rural as Kay. Acéphie Joseph was one of the first villagers to die of the new syndrome. But her illness, which ended in 1991, was merely the latest in a string of tragedies that she and her parents readily linked together in a long lamentation, by now familiar to those who tend the region's sick.

The litany begins, usually, down in the valley hidden under the still surface of the lake. Acéphie's parents came from families making a decent living by farming fertile tracts of land—their "ancestors' gardens"—and selling much of their produce. M. Joseph tilled the soil, and his wife, a tall and wearily elegant woman not nearly as old as she looked, was a "Madame Sarah," a market woman. "If it weren't for the dam," M. Joseph assured me, "we'd be just fine now. Acéphie, too." The Josephs' home was drowned along with most of their belongings, their crops, and the graves of their ancestors.

Refugees from the rising water, the Josephs built a miserable lean-to on a knoll of high land jutting into the new reservoir. They remained poised on their knoll for some years; Acéphie and her twin brother were born there. I asked them what induced them to move up to Kay, to build a house on the hard stone embankment of a dusty road. "Our hut was too near the water," replied M. Joseph. "I was afraid one of the children would fall into the lake and drown. Their mother had to be away selling; I was trying to

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

make a garden in this terrible soil. There was no one to keep an eye on them."

Acéphie attended primary school—a banana-thatched and open shelter in which children and young adults received the rudiments of literacy—in Kay. "She was the nicest of the Joseph sisters," recalled one of her classmates. "And she was as pretty as she was nice." Acéphie's beauty and her vulnerability may have sealed her fate as early as 1984. Though still in primary school, she was already nineteen years old; it was time for her to help generate income for her family, which was sinking deeper and deeper into poverty. Acéphie began to help her mother by carrying produce to a local market on Friday mornings. On foot or with a donkey it takes over an hour and a half to reach the market, and the road leads right through Péligre, the site of the dam and, until recently, a military barracks. The soldiers liked to watch the parade of women on Friday mornings. Sometimes they taxed them with haphazardly imposed fines; sometimes they taxed them with flirtatious banter.

Such flirtation is seldom unwelcome, at least to all appearances. In rural Haiti, entrenched poverty made the soldiers—the region's only salaried men—ever so much more attractive. Hunger was again a near-daily occurrence for the Joseph family; the times were as bad as those right after the flooding of the valley. And so when Acéphie's good looks caught the eye of Captain Jacques Honorat, a native of Belladère formerly stationed in Port-au-Prince, she returned his gaze.

Acéphie knew, as did everyone in the area, that Honorat had a wife and children. He was known, in fact, to have more than one regular partner. But Acéphie was taken in by his persistence, and when he went to speak to her parents, a long-term liaison was, from the outset, seriously considered:

> What would you have me do? I could tell that the old people were uncomfortable, worried; but they didn't say no. They didn't tell me to stay away from him. I wish they had, but how could they have known?. . .I knew it was a bad idea then, but I just didn't know why. I never dreamed he would give me a bad illness, never! I looked around and saw how poor we all were, how the old people were finished. . . .What would you have me do? It was a way out, that's how I saw it.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Acéphie and Honorat were sexual partners only briefly—for less than a month, according to Acéphie. Shortly thereafter, Honorat fell ill with unexplained fevers and kept to the company of his wife in Péligre. As Acéphie was looking for a *moun prensipal*—a "main man"—she tried to forget about the soldier. Still, it was shocking to hear, a few months after they parted, that he was dead.

Acéphie was at a crucial juncture in her life. Returning to school was out of the question. After some casting about, she went to Mirebalais, the nearest town, and began a course in what she euphemistically termed "cooking school." The school—really just an ambitious woman's courtyard—prepared poor girls like Acéphie for their inevitable turn as servants in the city. Indeed, domestic service was one of the rare growth industries in Haiti, and as much as Acéphie's proud mother hated to think of her daughter reduced to servitude, she could offer no viable alternative.

And so Acéphie, at age twenty-two, went off to Port-au-Prince, where she found a job as a housekeeper for a middle-class Haitian woman working for the US embassy. Acéphie's looks and manners kept her out of the backyard, the traditional milieu of Haitian servants: she was designated as the maid who, in addition to cleaning, answered the door and the telephone. Although Acéphie was not paid well—she received $30 each month—she tried to save a bit of money for her parents and siblings, recalling the hunger gnawing at her home village.

Still looking for a *moun prensipal,* Acéphie began seeing Blanco Nerette, a young man with origins identical to her own: Blanco's parents were also "water refugees" and Acéphie had known him when they were both attending the parochial school in Kay. Blanco had done well for himself, by Kay standards: he chauffeured a small bus between the Central Plateau and the capital. In a setting characterized by an unemployment rate of greater than 60 percent, his job commanded considerable respect. He easily won the attention of Acéphie. They planned to marry, and started pooling their resources.

Acéphie had worked as a maid for over three years when she discovered that she was pregnant. When she told Blanco, he became skittish. Nor was her employer pleased: it is considered unsightly to have a pregnant servant. So Acéphie returned to Kay, where she had a difficult pregnancy. Blanco came to see her once

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

or twice; they had a disagreement, and then she heard nothing from him. Following the birth of her daughter, Acéphie was sapped by repeated infections. She was shortly thereafter diagnosed with AIDS.

Soon Acéphie's life was consumed with managing drenching night sweats and debilitating diarrhea, while attempting to care for her first child. "We both need diapers now," she remarked bitterly towards the end of her life, faced each day not only with diarrhea, but also with a persistent lassitude. As she became more and more gaunt, some villagers suggested that Acéphie was the victim of sorcery. Others recalled her liaison with the soldier and her work as a servant in the city, both locally considered risk factors for AIDS. Acéphie herself knew that she had AIDS, although she was more apt to refer to herself as suffering from a disorder brought on by her work as a servant: "All that ironing, and then opening a refrigerator."

But this is not simply the story of Acéphie and her daughter. There is Jacques Honorat's first wife, who each year grows thinner. After Honorat's death, she found herself desperate, with no means of feeding her five hungry children, two of whom were also ill. Her subsequent union was again with a soldier. Honorat had at least two other partners, both of them poor peasant women, in the Central Plateau. One is HIV positive and has two sickly children. Blanco is still a handsome young man, apparently in good health and plying the roads from Mirebalais to Port-au-Prince. Who knows if he carries the virus? As an attractive man with a paying job, he has plenty of girlfriends.

Nor is this simply the story of those infected with the virus. The pain of Mme. Joseph and Acéphie's twin brother was manifestly intense, but few understood the anguish of her father. Shortly after Acéphie's death, M. Joseph hanged himself.

CHOUCHOU'S STORY

"History shudders, pierced by events of massive public suffering. Memory is haunted, stalked by the ghosts of history's victims, capriciously severed from life in genocides, holocausts, and extermi-

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

nation camps. The cries of the hungry, the shrieks of political prisoners, and the silent voices of the oppressed echo slowly, painfully through daily existence."

—Rebecca Chopp
The Praxis of Suffering

Chouchou Louis grew up not far from Kay in another small village in the steep and infertile highlands of Haiti's Central Plateau. He attended primary school for a couple of years but was obliged to drop out when his mother died. Then in his early teens, Chouchou joined his father and an older sister in tending their hillside gardens. In short, there was nothing remarkable about Chouchou's childhood; it was brief and harsh, like most in rural Haiti.

Throughout the 1980s, church activities formed Chouchou's sole distraction. These were hard years for the Haitian poor, beaten down by a family dictatorship well into its third decade. The Duvaliers, father and son, ruled through violence, largely directed at people whose conditions of existence were similar to that of Chouchou Louis. Although many of them tried to flee, often by boat, US policy maintained that Haitian asylum-seekers were "economic refugees." As part of a 1981 agreement between the administrations of Ronald Reagan and Jean-Claude Duvalier, refugees seized on the high seas were summarily returned to Haiti. During the first ten years of the accord, 24,559 Haitians applied for political asylum in the United States; eight applications were approved.

A growing Haitian pro-democracy movement led, in February 1986, to the flight of Duvalier. Chouchou Louis must have been about twenty years old when "Baby Doc" fell, and he shortly thereafter acquired a small radio. "All he did," recalled his wife years later, "was work the land, listen to the radio, and go to church." It was on the radio that Chouchou heard about the people who took over after Duvalier fled. Like many in rural Haiti, Chouchou was distressed to hear that power had been handed to the military, led by hardened *duvaliéristes*. It was this army that the US government, which in 1916 had created the modern Haitian army, termed "Haiti's best bet for democracy." In the eighteen months following Duvalier's departure, over $200 million in US aid passed through the hands of the junta.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

In early 1989, Chouchou moved in with Chantal Brisé, who was pregnant. They were living together when Father Jean-Bertrand Aristide—by then considered the leader of the pro-democracy movement—declared his candidacy for the presidency in the internationally monitored elections of 1990. In December of that year almost 70 percent of the voters chose Father Aristide from a field of ten presidential candidates.

Like most rural Haitians, Chouchou and Chantal welcomed Aristide's election with great joy. For the first time, the poor—Haiti's overwhelming majority, formerly silent—felt they had someone representing their interests in the presidential palace. These are the reasons why the military coup d'état of September 1991 stirred great anger in the countryside, where the majority of Haitians live. Anger was soon followed by sadness, then fear, as the country's repressive machinery, dismantled during the seven months of Aristide's tenure, was hastily reassembled under the patronage of the army.

In the month after the coup, Chouchou was sitting in a truck en route to the town of Hinche. Chouchou offered for the consideration of his fellow passengers what Haitians call a *pwen,* a pointed remark intended to say something other than what it literally means. As they bounced along, he began complaining about the conditions of the roads, observing that, "if things were as they should be, these roads would have been repaired already." One eyewitness later told me that at no point in the commentary was Aristide's name invoked. But Chouchou's complaints were recognized by his fellow passengers as veiled language deploring the coup. Unfortunately for Chouchou, one of the passengers was an out-of-uniform soldier. At the next checkpoint, the soldier had him seized and dragged from the truck. There, a group of soldiers and their lackeys—their *attachés,* to use the epithet then in favor—immediately began beating Chouchou, in front of the other passengers; they continued to beat him as they brought him to the military barracks in Hinche. A scar on his right temple was a souvenir of his stay in Hinche, which lasted several days.

Perhaps the worst aftereffect of such episodes of brutality was that, in general, they marked the beginning of persecution, not the end. In rural Haiti, during this time, any scrape with the law (i.e., the military) led to blacklisting. For men like Chouchou, staying

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

out of jail involved keeping the local attachés happy, and he did this by avoiding his home village. But Chouchou lived in fear of a second arrest, his wife later told me, and his fears proved to be well-founded.

On January 22, 1992, Chouchou was visiting his sister when he was arrested by two attachés. No reason was given for the arrest, and Chouchou's sister regarded as ominous the seizure of the young man's watch and radio. He was roughly marched to the nearest military checkpoint, where he was tortured by soldiers and the attachés. One area resident later told us that the prisoner's screams made her children weep with terror.

On January 25, Chouchou was dumped in a ditch to die. The army scarcely took the trouble to circulate the canard that he had stolen some bananas. (The Haitian press, by then thoroughly muzzled, did not even broadcast this false version of events.) Relatives carried Chouchou back to Chantal and their daughter under the cover of night. By early on the morning of January 26, when I arrived, Chouchou was scarcely recognizable. His face, and especially his left temple, was misshapen, swollen, and lacerated; his right temple was also scarred. His mouth was a pool of dark, coagulated blood. His neck was peculiarly swollen, his throat collared with bruises, the traces of a gun butt. His chest and sides were badly bruised, and he had several fractured ribs. His genitals had been mutilated.

That was his front side; presumably, the brunt of the beatings came from behind. Chouchou's back and thighs were striped with deep lash marks. His buttocks were macerated, the skin flayed down to the exposed gluteal muscles. Some of these stigmata appeared to be infected.

Chouchou coughed up more than a liter of blood in his agonal moments. Given his respiratory difficulties and the amount of blood he coughed up, it is likely that the beatings caused him to bleed, slowly at first, then catastrophically, into his lungs. His head injuries had not robbed him of his faculties, although it might have been better for him had they done so. It took Chouchou three days to die.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

EXPLAINING VERSUS MAKING SENSE OF SUFFERING

The pain in our shoulder comes
You say, from the damp; and this is also the reason
For the stain on the wall of our flat.
So tell us:
Where does the damp come from?

—*Bertholt Brecht*

Are these stories of suffering emblematic of something other than two tragic and premature deaths? If so, how representative is each of these experiences? Little about Acéphie's story is unique; I have told it in detail because it brings into relief many of the forces constraining not only her options, but those of most Haitian women. Such, in any case, is my opinion after caring for dozens of poor women with AIDS. There is a deadly monotony in their stories: young women—or teenaged girls—who were driven to Port-au-Prince by the lure of an escape from the harshest poverty; once in the city, each worked as a domestic; none managed to find financial security. The women interviewed were straightforward about the nonvoluntary aspect of their sexual activity: in their opinions, they had been driven into unfavorable unions by poverty.[5] Indeed, such testimony should call into question facile notions of "consensual sex."

What about the murder of Chouchou Louis? International human rights groups estimate that more than three thousand Haitians were killed in the year after the September 1991 coup that overthrew Haiti's first democratically elected government. Nearly all of those killed were civilians who, like Chouchou, fell into the hands of military or paramilitary forces. The vast majority of victims were poor peasants, like Chouchou, or urban slum dwellers. (The figures cited here are conservative estimates; I am quite sure that no journalist or observer ever came to count the body of Chouchou Louis.[6])

Thus, the agony of Acéphie and Chouchou was, in a sense, "modal" suffering. In Haiti, AIDS and political violence are two leading causes of death among young adults. These afflictions were not the result of accident or of force majeure; they were the consequence, direct or indirect, of human agency. When the

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Artibonite Valley was flooded, depriving families like the Josephs of their land, a human decision was behind it; when the Haitian army was endowed with money and unfettered power, human decisions were behind that, too. In fact, some of the same decisionmakers may have been involved in both cases.

If bureaucrats and soldiers seemed to have unconstrained sway over the lives of the rural poor, the agency of Acéphie and Chouchou was, correspondingly, curbed at every turn. These grim biographies suggest that the social and economic forces that have helped to shape the AIDS epidemic are, in every sense, the same forces that led to Chouchou's death and to the larger repression in which it was eclipsed. What is more, both were "at risk" of such a fate long before they met the soldiers who altered their destinies. They were both, from the outset, victims of structural violence.

While certain kinds of suffering are readily observable—and the subject of countless films, novels, and poems—structural violence all too often defeats those who would describe it. There are at least three reasons why this is so. First, there is the "exoticization" of suffering as lurid as that endured by Acéphie and Chouchou. The suffering of individuals whose lives and struggles recall our own tends to move us; the suffering of those who are distanced, whether by geography, gender, "race," or culture, is sometimes less affecting.

Second, there is the sheer weight of the suffering, which makes it all the more difficult to render: "Knowledge of suffering cannot be conveyed in pure facts and figures, reportings that objectify the suffering of countless persons. The horror of suffering is not only its immensity but the faces of the anonymous victims who have little voice, let alone rights, in history."[7]

Third, the dynamics and distribution of suffering are still poorly understood. Physicians, when fortunate, can alleviate the suffering of the sick. But explaining its distribution requires more minds, more resources. Case studies of individuals reveal suffering, they tell us what happens to one or many people; but to explain suffering, one must embed individual biography in the larger matrix of culture, history, and political economy.

In short, it is one thing to make sense of extreme suffering—a universal activity, surely—and quite another to explain it. Life experiences such as those of Acéphie and Chouchou—who as

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Haitians living in poverty shared similar social conditions—must be embedded in ethnography if their representativeness is to be understood. These local understandings are to be embedded, in turn, in the larger-scale historical system of which the fieldwork site is a part.[8] The social and economic forces that dictate life choices in Haiti's Central Plateau affect many millions of individuals, and it is in the context of these global forces that the suffering of individuals receives its appropriate context of interpretation.

Similar insights are central to liberation theology, which takes the suffering of the poor as its central problematic. In *The Praxis of Suffering,* Rebecca Chopp notes that, "In a variety of forms, liberation theology speaks with those who, through their suffering, call into question the meaning and truth of human history."[9] Unlike most previous theologies, and unlike much modern philosophy, liberation theology has attempted to use social analysis to both explain and deplore human suffering. Its key texts bring into relief not merely the suffering of the wretched of the earth, but also the forces that promote that suffering. The theologian Leonardo Boff, in commenting on one of these texts, notes that it "moves immediately to the structural analysis of these forces and denounces the systems, structures, and mechanisms that 'create a situation where the rich get richer at the expense of the poor, who get even poorer.'"[10]

In short, few liberation theologians engage in reflection on suffering without attempting to understand its mechanisms. Theirs is a theology that underlines connections. Robert McAfee Brown has these connections and also the poor in mind when, paraphrasing the Uruguayan Jesuit Juan Luis Segundo, he observes that "the world that is satisfying to us is the same world that is utterly devastating to them."[11]

MULTIAXIAL MODELS OF SUFFERING

> *"Events of massive, public suffering defy quantitative analysis. How can one really understand statistics citing the death of six million Jews or graphs of third-world starvation? Do numbers really reveal the agony, the interruption, the questions that these victims put to the meaning and nature of our individual lives and life as a whole?"*
>
> —*Rebecca Chopp*
> *The Praxis of Suffering*

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

How might we discern the nature of structural violence and explore its contribution to human suffering? Can we devise an analytic model, one with explanatory and predictive power, for understanding suffering in a global context? Some would argue that this task, though daunting, is both urgent and feasible. Our cursory examination of AIDS and political violence in Haiti suggests that analysis must, first, be *geographically broad.* As noted, the world as we know it is becoming increasingly interconnected. A corollary of this belief is that extreme suffering—especially when on a grand scale, as in genocide—is seldom divorced from the actions of the powerful.[12] The analysis must also be *historically deep*—not merely deep enough to remind us of events and decisions such as those which deprived Acéphie of her land and founded the Haitian military, but deep enough to remember that modern-day Haitians are the descendants of a people kidnapped from Africa in order to provide us with sugar, coffee, and cotton and to enrich a few in a mercantilist economy.

Factors including gender, ethnicity ("race"), and socioeconomic status may each be shown to play a role in rendering individuals and groups vulnerable to extreme human suffering. But in most settings these factors have limited explanatory power. *Simultaneous* consideration of various social "axes" is imperative in efforts to discern a political economy of brutality. Furthermore, such social factors are differentially weighted in different settings and at different times, as even brief consideration of their contributions to extreme suffering suggests.

The Axis of Gender

Acéphie Joseph and Chouchou Louis shared, as noted, a similar social status, and each died after contact with the Haitian military. But gender helps to explain why Acéphie died of AIDS whereas Chouchou died from torture. Gender inequality also helps to explain why the suffering of Acéphie is much more commonplace than that of Chouchou. Throughout the world, women are confronted with sexism, an ideology that designates them as inferior to men. When, in 1974, a group of feminist anthropologists surveyed the status of women living in several disparate settings, they found that, in every society studied, men dominated political, legal, and economic institutions to varying degrees; in no culture

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

was the status of women genuinely coordinate, much less superior, to that of men.[13] This power differential has meant that women's rights may be violated in innumerable ways. Although male victims are clearly preponderant in studies of torture, the much more common crimes of domestic violence and rape are almost exclusively endured by females. In the United States, the number of such aggressions is staggering. When sexual assaults by both intimates and strangers are considered, "one in four women has been the victim of a completed rape and one in four women has been physically battered, according to the results of recent community-based studies."[14]

In most settings, however, gender alone does not define risk for such assaults on dignity. It is *poor* women who bear the brunt of these assaults.[15] This is true not only of domestic violence and rape, but also of AIDS and its distribution, as anthropologist Martha Ward points out:

> The collection of statistics by ethnicity rather than by socio-economic status obscures the fact that the majority of women with AIDS in the United States are poor. Women are at risk for HIV not because they are African-American or speak Spanish; women are at risk because poverty is the primary and determining condition of their lives.[16]

Similarly, only women can experience maternal mortality, a cause of anguish around the world. More than half a million women die each year in childbirth, but not all women are at increased risk of adverse outcomes in pregnancy. In 1985, the World Health Organization estimated that maternal mortality is, on average, approximately 150 times higher in developing countries than in developed nations. In Haiti, where maternal mortality is as high as fourteen hundred deaths per one hundred thousand live births—almost five hundred times higher than in the wealthy countries—these deaths are almost all registered among the poor.[17]

The Axis of "Race" or Ethnicity

The idea of race, which is considered to be a biologically insignificant term, has enormous social currency. Racial classifications have been used to deprive certain groups of basic rights, and therefore have an important place in considerations of human

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

suffering. In South Africa, for years a living laboratory for the study of the long-term effects of racism, epidemiologists report that the infant mortality rate among blacks may be as much as ten times higher than among whites. For South African blacks, the proximate cause of increased rates of morbidity and mortality is lack of access to resources: "*Poverty* remains the primary cause of the prevalence of many diseases and widespread hunger and malnutrition among black South Africans."[18] And social inequality is seen in the uneven distribution of poverty.

Significant mortality differentials between blacks and whites are also registered in the United States, which shares with South Africa the distinction of being the only two industrialized countries failing to record mortality data by socioeconomic status. In the United States, in 1988, life expectancy at birth was 75.5 years for whites and 69.5 years for blacks. Accordingly, there has been a certain amount of discussion about race differentials in mortality, but public health expert Vicente Navarro recently complained about the "deafening silence" on the topic of class differentials in mortality in the United States, where "race is used as a *substitute* for class." But in 1986, on "one of the few occasions that the US government collected information on mortality rates (for heart and cerebrovascular disease) by class, the results showed that, by whatever indicators of class one might choose (level of education, income, or occupation), mortality rates are related to social class."[19] Indeed, for the major causes of death (heart disease and cerebrovascular disease), class differentials were significantly larger than race differentials. "The growing mortality differentials between whites and blacks," Navarro concludes, "cannot be understood by looking only at race; they are part and parcel of larger mortality differentials—class differentials."[20] The sociologist William Julius Wilson made a similar point in his landmark study, *The Declining Significance of Race.* He argues that "trained and educated blacks, like trained and educated whites, will continue to enjoy the advantages and privileges of their class status."[21] It is the black poor—and an analysis of the mechanisms of their impoverishment—that are being left out.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

The Conflation of Structural Violence and Cultural Difference

Awareness of cultural differences has long complicated discussions of human suffering. Some anthropologists have argued that what seem to outside observers to be obvious assaults on dignity may in fact be long-standing cultural institutions highly valued by a society. Often-cited examples range from female circumcision in the Sudan to head-hunting in the Philippines. Such discussions are invariably linked to the concept of cultural relativism, which has a long and checkered history in anthropology. Is every culture a law unto itself and a law unto nothing other than itself? In recent decades, confidence in reflex cultural relativism faltered as anthropologists turned their attention to "complex societies" characterized by extremely inegalitarian social structures. Many found themselves unwilling to condone social inequity merely because it was buttressed by cultural beliefs, no matter how ancient. Cultural relativism was also questioned as a part of a broader critique of anthropology by citizens of the former colonies.[22]

But this rethinking has not yet eroded a tendency, registered in many of the social sciences but perhaps particularly in anthropology, to confuse structural violence with cultural difference. Many are the ethnographies in which poverty and inequality, the end results of a long process of impoverishment, are conflated with "otherness." Very often, such myopia is not really a question of motives, but rather, as Talal Asad has suggested, our "mode of perceiving and objectifying alien societies."[23] Part of the problem may be the ways in which the term "culture" is used. "The idea of culture," explains one authority approvingly in a book on the subject, "places the researcher in a position of equality with his subjects: each 'belongs to a culture.'"[24] The tragedy, of course, is that this equality, however comforting to the researcher, is entirely illusory. Anthropology has usually "studied down" steep gradients of power.

Such illusions suggest an important means by which other misreadings—most notably the conflation of poverty and cultural difference—are sustained. They suggest that the anthropologist and "his" subject, being *from* different cultures, are *of* different worlds and *of* different times.[25] These sorts of misreadings, innocent enough within academia, are finding a more insidious utility

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

within elite culture, which is becoming increasingly *transnational.* Concepts of cultural relativism, and even arguments to reinstate the dignity of different cultures and "races," have been easily assimilated by some of the very agencies that perpetuate extreme suffering.[26] Abuses of cultural concepts are particularly insidious in discussions of suffering in general and of human rights abuses more specifically: cultural difference is one of several forms of essentialism used to explain away assaults on dignity and suffering in general. Practices, including torture, are said to be "in their culture" or "in their nature"—"their" designating either the victims or the perpetrators, or both, as may be expedient.

Such analytic abuses are rarely questioned, even though systemic studies of extreme suffering would suggest that the concept of culture should have an increasingly limited role in explaining the *distribution* of misery. The interpretation of—and justifications for—suffering is usually patterned along cultural lines, but this, I would argue, is another question.

STRUCTURAL VIOLENCE AND EXTREME SUFFERING

At night I listen to their phantoms
shouting in my ear
shaking me out of lethargy
issuing me commands
I think of their tattered lives
of their feverish hands
reaching out to seize ours.
It's not that they're begging
they're demanding
they've earned the right to order us
to break up our sleep
to come awake
to shake off once and for all
this lassitude.

—*Claribel Alegría*
"Visitas Nocturnas"

Any distinguishing characteristic, whether social or biological, can serve as pretext for discrimination, and thus as a cause of suffering. In discussing each of the above factors, however, it is clear

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

that no single axis can fully define increased risk for extreme human suffering. Efforts to attribute explanatory efficacy to one variable lead to immodest claims of causality, for wealth and power have often protected individual women, gays, and ethnic minorities from the suffering and adverse outcomes associated with assaults on dignity. Similarly, poverty can often efface the "protective" effects of status based on gender, race, or sexual orientation. Leonardo Boff and Clodovis Boff, writing from Brazil, insist on the primacy of the economic:

> We have to observe that the socioeconomically oppressed (the poor) do not simply exist *alongside* other oppressed groups, such as blacks, indigenous peoples, women—to take the three major categories in the Third World. No, the "class-oppressed"—the socioeconomically poor—are the infrastructural expression of the process of oppression. The other groups represent "superstructural" expressions of oppression and because of this are deeply conditioned by the infrastructural. It is one thing to be a black taxi-driver, quite another to be a black football idol; it is one thing to be a woman working as a domestic servant, quite another to be the first lady of the land; it is one thing to be an Amerindian thrown off your land, quite another to be an Amerindian owning your own farm.[27]

None of this is to deny the ill effects of sexism or racism, even in the wealthy countries of North America and Europe. The point is merely to call for more fine-grained and systemic analyses of power and privilege in discussions of who is likely to suffer and in what ways.

The capacity to suffer is, clearly, part of being human. But not all suffering is equal, in spite of pernicious and often self-serving identity politics that suggest otherwise. One of the unfortunate sequelae of identity politics has been the obscuring of structural violence, which metes out injuries of vastly different severity. Careful assessment of severity is important, at least to physicians, who must practice triage and referral daily. What suffering needs to be taken care of first and with what resources? It *is* possible to speak of extreme human suffering, and an inordinate share of this sort of pain is currently endured by those living in poverty. Take, for example, illness and premature death, in many places in the world the leading cause of extreme suffering. In a striking departure from previous, staid reports, the World Health Organization

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

now acknowledges that poverty is the world's greatest killer: "Poverty wields its destructive influence at every stage of human life, from the moment of conception to the grave. It conspires with the most deadly and painful diseases to bring a wretched existence to all those who suffer from it."[28]

As the twentieth century draws to a close, the world's poor are the chief victims of structural violence—a violence which has thus far defied the analysis of many seeking to understand the nature and distribution of extreme suffering. Why might this be so? One answer is that the poor are not only more likely to suffer, they are also more likely to have their suffering silenced. As Chilean theologian Pablo Richard, noting the fall of the Berlin Wall, has warned, "We are aware that another gigantic wall is being constructed in the Third World, to hide the reality of the poor majorities. A wall between the rich and poor is being built, so that poverty does not annoy the powerful and the poor are obliged to die in the silence of history."[29]

The task at hand, if this silence is to be broken, is to identify the forces conspiring to promote suffering, with the understanding that these will be differentially weighted in different settings. In so doing, we stand a chance to discern the *forces motrices* of extreme suffering. A sound analytic purchase on the dynamics and distribution of such affliction is, perhaps, a prerequisite to preventing or, at least, assuaging it. Then, at last, there may be hope of finding a balm in Gilead.[30]

ACKNOWLEDGMENTS

I have the usual debts to faithful readers such as Haun Saussy and Jim Yong Kim, but wish also to acknowledge the constructive criticisms of this issue's editors and of Didi Bertrand, Ophelia Dahl, Johanna Daily, Jonathan Mann, Joe Rhatigan, Joyce Bendremer, and Vinh Kim Nguyen.

ENDNOTES

[1]Jean Weise, "The Interaction of Western and Indigenous Medicine in Haiti in Regard to Tuberculosis," Ph.D. Dissertation, Department of Anthropology, University of North Carolina at Chapel Hill, 1971.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[2]The names of the Haitians cited here have been changed, as have the names of their home villages.

[3]For a recent review of the effects of inegalitarian social structures on the health of wealthier populations, see Michael Marmot, "Social Differentials in Health Within and Between Populations," *Dædalus* 123 (4) (Fall 1994): 197–216.

[4]Some would argue that the relationship between individual agency and supraindividual structures forms the central problematic of contemporary social theory. I have tried, in this essay, to avoid what Pierre Bourdieu has termed "the absurd opposition between individual and society," and I acknowledge the influence of Bourdieu, who has contributed enormously to the debate on structure and agency. For a concise statement of his (often revised) views on this subject, see Pierre Bourdieu, *In Other Words: Essays Towards a Reflexive Sociology* (Cambridge: Polity, 1990). That a supple and fundamentally non-deterministic model of agency would have such a deterministic—and pessimistic—"feel" is largely a reflection of my topic, suffering, and my fieldwork site.

[5]Paul Farmer, "Culture, Poverty, and the Dynamics of HIV Transmission in Rural Haiti," in Han ten Brummelhuis and Gilbert Herdt, eds., *Culture and Sexual Risk: Anthropological Perspectives on AIDS* (New York: Gordon and Breach, 1995), 3–28.

[6]For an overview of the human rights situation during the recent coup, see Americas Watch and the National Coalition for Haitian Refugees, *Silencing a People: The Destruction of Civil Society in Haiti* (New York: Human Rights Watch, 1993) and William O'Neill, "The Roots of Human Rights Violations in Haiti," *Georgetown Immigration Law Journal* 7 (1) (1993): 87–117. I have reviewed these and other reports in Paul Farmer, *The Uses of Haiti* (Monroe, Maine: Common Courage, 1994).

[7]Rebecca Chopp, *The Praxis of Suffering* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis, 1986), 2.

[8]This argument is made at greater length in "AIDS and the Anthropology of Suffering," in Paul Farmer, *AIDS and Accusation: Haiti and the Geography of Blame* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1992). The term "historical system" is used following Immanuel Wallerstein, who for many years has argued that even the most far-flung locales—Haiti's Central Plateau, for example—are part of the same social and economic nexus: "by the late nineteenth century, for the first time ever, there existed only one historical system on the globe. We are still in that situation today." See Immanuel Wallerstein, "World-Systems Analysis," in *Social Theory Today,* ed. Anthony Giddens and Jonathan Turner (Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1985), 318. See also Immanuel Wallerstein, *The Modern World-System: Capitalist Agriculture and the Origins of the European World-Economy in the Sixteenth Century* (San Diego, Calif.: Academic Press, 1974). The weakness of these analyses is, of course, their extreme divorce from personal experience.

[9]Chopp, *The Praxis of Suffering,* 2. See also the works of Gustavo Gutiérrez, who has written a great deal about the meaning of suffering in the twentieth century: for example Gustavo Gutiérrez, *A Theology of Liberation* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis, 1973) and Gustavo Gutiérrez, *The Power of the Poor in History* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis, 1983). For anthropological studies of liberation theology in social context, see the ethnographies by John Burdick, *Looking for God*

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

in Brazil (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1993) and Roger Lancaster, *Thanks to God and the Revolution* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1988).

[10]From the Puebla document, cited in Paul Farmer, "Medicine and Social Justice: Insights from Liberation Theology," *America* 173 (2) (1995): 14.

[11]Robert McAfee Brown, *Liberation Theology: An Introductory Guide* (Louisville, Ky.: Westminster, 1993), 44.

[12]The political economy of genocide is explored by Christopher Simpson in *The Splendid Blond Beast: Money, Law, and Genocide in the Twentieth Century* (New York: Grove Press, 1993). See also Gotz Aly, Peter Chroust, and Christian Pross, *Cleansing the Fatherland: Nazi Medicine and Racial Hygiene* (Baltimore, Md.: Johns Hopkins University Press, 1994). As regards the transnational political economy of human rights abuses, see the two-volume study by Noam Chomsky and Edward S. Herman, *The Washington Connection and Third World Fascism* and *After the Cataclysm* (Boston, Mass.: South End Press, 1979).

[13]Michelle Rosaldo and Louise Lamphere, eds., *Women, Culture, and Society* (Stanford, Calif.: Stanford University Press, 1974).

[14]Mary Koss, Paul Koss, and Joy Woodruff, "Deleterious Effects of Criminal Victimization on Women's Health and Medical Utilization," *Archives of Internal Medicine* 151 (1991): 342.

[15]It is important to note, however, that upper class/caste women are in many societies also subject to laws that virtually efface marital rape. The study by Koss, Koss, and Woodruff includes this crime with other forms of criminal victimization, but it is only through community-based surveys that such information is collected.

[16]Martha Ward, "A Different Disease: HIV/AIDS and Health Care for Women in Poverty," *Culture, Medicine and Psychiatry* 17 (4) (1993): 414.

[17]World Health Organization, "Maternal Mortality: Helping Women Off the Road to Death," *WHO Chronicle* 40 (1985): 175–83.

[18]Elena Nightingale, Kari Hannibal, Jack Geiger, Lawrence Hartmann, Robert Lawrence, and Jeanne Spurlock, "Apartheid Medicine: Health and Human Rights in South Africa," *Journal of the American Medical Association* 264 (16) (1990): 2098. The italics are mine. For a more in-depth account, and a more complicated view of the mechanisms by which apartheid and the South African economy are related to disease causation, see Randall Packard, *White Plague, Black Labor: Tuberculosis and the Political Economy of Health and Disease in South Africa* (Berkeley, Calif.: University of California Press, 1989).

[19]Vicente Navarro, "Race or Class versus Race and Class: Mortality Differentials in the United States," *The Lancet* 336 (1990): 1238.

[20]Ibid., 1240.

[21]William Julius Wilson, *The Declining Significance of Race: Blacks and Changing American Institutions*, 2nd ed. (Chicago, Ill.: University of Chicago Press, 1980), 178.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

[22]See the studies by Elvin Hatch, *Culture and Morality: The Relativity of Values in Anthropology* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1983), and by Ernest Gellner, *Relativism and the Social Sciences* (Cambridge: Cambridge University Press, 1985).

[23]Talal Asad, ed., *Anthropology and the Colonial Encounter* (London: Ithaca Press, 1975), 17.

[24]Roy Wagner, *The Invention of Culture* (Englewood Cliffs, N.J.: Prentice-Hall, 1975), 2.

[25]Johannes Fabian has argued that this "denial of coevalness" is much ingrained in our discipline. Not to be dismissed as an issue of style, such a denial contributes to the blindness of the anthropologist: "Either he submits to the condition of coevalness and produces ethnographic knowledge, or he deludes himself into temporal distance and misses the object of his search." See Johannes Fabian, *Time and the Other: How Anthropology Makes its Object* (New York: Columbia University Press, 1983). See also the compelling essay by Orin Starn, "Missing the Revolution: Anthropologists and the War in Peru," in George Marcus, ed., *Rereading Cultural Anthropology* (Durham, N.C.: Duke University Press, 1992), 152–80.

[26]For a penetrating examination of the appropriation of identity politics by big business, see the essay by L. A. Kauffman, "The Diversity Game," *The Village Voice,* 31 August 1993.

[27]Leonardo Boff and Clodovis Boff, *Introducing Liberation Theology* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis Books, 1987), 29.

[28]World Health Organization, *Bridging the Gaps* (Geneva: World Health Organization, 1995), 5.

[29]Cited by Jack Nelson-Pallmeyer, *Brave New World Order: Must We Pledge Allegiance?* (Maryknoll, N.Y.: Orbis, 1992), 14.

[30]Editors' note: Paul Farmer's paper was not one of the papers presented at the Bellagio Conference on "Social Suffering." It was solicited by the editors after that meeting took place.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

DÆDALUS Issues in Print

American Education: Still Separate, Still Unequal (Fall 1995)
The Quest for World Order (Summer 1995)
What Future for the State? (Spring 1995)
An American Dilemma Revisited (Winter 1995)
Health and Wealth (Fall 1994)
After Communism: What? (Summer 1994)
Europe Through a Glass Darkly (Spring 1994)
Germany in Transition (Winter 1994)
Reconstructing Nations and States (Summer 1993)
America's Childhood (Winter 1993)
Immobile Democracy? (Fall 1992)
Political Pharmacology: Thinking About Drugs (Summer 1992)
Religion and Politics (Summer 1991)
Literacy in America (Spring 1990)
Another India (Fall 1989)
Three Decades of *DÆDALUS* (Summer 1988)
Futures (Summer 1987)
Past and Present (Spring 1987)
The Arts and Humanities in America's Schools (Summer 1983)
Reading: Old and New (Winter 1983)

* * *

To order send $10.95 per issue (Canadian residents send $12.50 per issue) to: *Dædalus* Business Office • 136 Irving Street • Cambridge, MA 02138

For shipment outside the United States and Canada, add $1.00 per volume to the US rate for surface mail delivery.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Dædalus is now on the Internet

Visit our World Wide Web site at:
http://www.amacad.org

This service provides the most current information about *Dædalus,* including press releases and ordering information. In addition, it provides direct e-mail access to our editorial offices, so you can let us know how we are doing: Which issues were of particular interest to you? Which authors would you like to see more of? What topics would you like to see covered in the future?

Send comments to: **daedalus@amacad.org**

How to Get Permission to Reprint *Dædalus* Articles

If you wish to reprint an article from *Dædalus* in another publication or to reproduce an article for classroom or other use, please send a written request to:

Permissions Manager
Dædalus
136 Irving Street
Cambridge, MA 02138

Permission can be granted in most cases; charges vary according to use of the copyrighted materials. If you have any questions, call (617) 491-2600 between 9:00 A.M. and 5:00 P.M. Eastern Time, and ask to speak with our permissions manager.

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED

Arthur Kleinman and Joan Kleinman
The Appeal of Experience; The Dismay of Images: Cultural Appropriations of Suffering in Our Times

David B. Morris
About Suffering: Voice, Genre, and Moral Community

Lawrence L. Langer
The Alarmed Vision: Social Suffering and Holocaust Atrocity

Veena Das
Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain

Stanley Cavell
Comments on Veena Das's Essay "Language and Body: Transactions in the Construction of Pain"

Mamphela Ramphele
Political Widowhood in South Africa: The Embodiment of Ambiguity

Vera Schwarcz
The Pane of Sorrow: Public Uses of Personal Grief in Modern China

Tu Wei-ming
Destructive Will and Ideological Holocaust: Maoism as a Source of Social Suffering in China

Anne Harrington
Unmasking Suffering's Masks: Reflections on Old and New Memories of Nazi Medicine

Margaret Lock
Displacing Suffering: The Reconstruction of Death in North America and Japan

Allan Young
Suffering and the Origins of Traumatic Memory

Paul Farmer
On Suffering and Structural Violence: A View from Below

PRODUCED BY UNZ.ORG
ELECTRONIC REPRODUCTION PROHIBITED